

**Missionaries, the Hindu State  
and British Paramountcy in  
Travancore and Cochin, 1858-1936**

Kawashima Koji  
Family name

A Thesis Submitted  
for the Degree of Ph.D.

School of Oriental and African Studies  
University of London

1994



ProQuest Number: 11010648

All rights reserved

INFORMATION TO ALL USERS

The quality of this reproduction is dependent upon the quality of the copy submitted.

In the unlikely event that the author did not send a complete manuscript and there are missing pages, these will be noted. Also, if material had to be removed, a note will indicate the deletion.



ProQuest 11010648

Published by ProQuest LLC (2018). Copyright of the Dissertation is held by the Author.

All rights reserved.

This work is protected against unauthorized copying under Title 17, United States Code  
Microform Edition © ProQuest LLC.

ProQuest LLC.  
789 East Eisenhower Parkway  
P.O. Box 1346  
Ann Arbor, MI 48106 – 1346

## CONTENTS

	Abstract	3
	Acknowledgements	5
	List of Tables	6
	Abbreviations	7
	Glossary	8
	Map: Travancore and Cochin in 1931	10
	Introduction	11
1	Travancore State and British Paramountcy	32
2	The British Authorities and the Missionaries	92
3	Education: Compromise and Competition	138
4	Medicine: The 'Charitable State' and the Missionaries	189
5	The State, the Missionaries and the Lower Castes	240
6	Cochin: Different Developments in a Similar State	302
	Conclusion	349
	Appendix	359
	Bibliography	363

## ABSTRACT

This thesis seeks to examine and explain changes in the triangular relationship between Christian missionaries, an Indian princely state and the British colonial authorities. It argues that, in the second half of the nineteenth century, the missionaries and the self-declared Hindu state of Travancore maintained a largely favourable relationship despite the clear differences in their respective religious positions. For its vigorous efforts towards 'modernization', Travancore needed the educational and medical activities of the missionaries. At the same time, the Madras government demanded the abolition of caste disabilities and supported similar demands from the missionaries.

However, the situation changed significantly with the emergence of Hindu revivalism and communal movements in the late nineteenth century. The state as well as the higher castes became alarmed at the conversion of large number of the lower castes to Christianity. The British authorities, faced with the rise of Indian nationalism, became much more sensitive to religious feelings in Travancore and sought to avoid intervening in social and religious matters as far as possible, though, by contrast, intervention in Cochin remained, for various reasons, more active. In this way, the missionaries practically lost support from the British government. Instead, they were obliged to pay more attention



to the Maharaja and his government, which adopted various anti-missionary policies in the 1890s and 1900s.

Nevertheless, the Travancore government still needed missionary educational and medical activities as well as their strong influence over the low-caste Christians who became increasingly assertive. But in the 1930s, their relationship became strained once more. The missionaries, who could not expect any substantial help from the British authorities, had almost no choice but to accept the situation. In this way, the Travancore state, while utilizing missionary activities, largely succeeded in preventing Christian influence from expanding further.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

During my research stay in India, I was helped by many people. I am particularly grateful to K.K. Kusuman, P.K. Michael Tharakan and M. Kabir, who gave me kind help and advice. In London, the comments of Peter Robb and Avril Powell were very helpful, and I wish to thank them. Also, I would like to express my gratitude to Shigematsu Shinji, Yanagisawa Haruka, Nagasaki Nobuko and Nakazato Nariaki, who gave me advice, comments and encouragements.

I am greatly indebted to the Yoshida Scholarship Foundation and the Morita International Scholarship Foundation for their generous support, which enabled me to study in London and to do research in India. I also wish to thank the staff of the Kerala State Archives, the Kerala Legislature Library in Trivandrum, the National Archives of India in New Delhi, the Oriental and India Office Collections, the SOAS Library, the Salvation Army International Heritage Centre in London and the libraries of the University of Birmingham, the University of Kerala, the United Theological College in Bangalore, the Centre for Development Studies in Trivandrum and the CMS College in Kottayam.

However, my greatest debt is to my supervisor, Professor David Arnold. Without his patience and encouragement as well as his comments and criticisms, I could never have completed this thesis. I would like to express my deep-felt gratitude to him. Finally, I wish to thank my wife, Kawashima Masue, who has always supported me with her love.

## TABLES

- 1 Educational Institutions of the LMS, 1866
- 2 Expenditure on Education, 1864-1878
- 3 Number of Aided Schools, 1870-1891
- 4 Number of Government Schools and Aided Schools, 1875-1894
- 5 Number of Pulaya and Paraya Pupils, 1910-1921
- 6 Number of Patients Treated in the Government and LMS  
Institutions, 1870-1931
- 7 Number of Patients Treated in the Aided Christian  
Institutions in 1896-97
- 8 Castes and Communities Treated in the General Hospital  
in 1879-80
- 9 LMS Medical Missionaries in Travancore, 1838-1937
- 10 Income for 1875 of the LMS Medical Mission, Travancore
- 11 Income for 1914 of the LMS Medical Mission, Travancore
- 12 Government Expenditure on Medical Institutions, 1910-1925
- 13 Communal Co-operative Societies in Travancore in 1932-33
- 14 Major Castes and Communities in Travancore and Cochin,  
1911
- 15 The Percentage of Pupils Educated in the Government  
Schools in Travancore and Cochin, 1900-1931
- 16 Running Bodies of the Aided Schools in Cochin and the  
Number of Pupils
- 17 Number of Patients Treated in Government Institutions,  
1870-1931
- 18 Communities of the Patients Treated in the Government  
Medical Institutions in Cochin State in 1888-89

## ABBREVIATIONS

AGG	Agent to the Governor-General
<u>CAR</u>	<u>Cochin Administration Report</u>
Ch.Sec.	Chief Secretary
CMS	Church Missionary Society
CMSA	Church Missionary Society Archives
CRR	Crown Representative Records
CWMA	Council for World Mission Archives
FR	Fortnightly Report of the AGG
G.O.	Government Order
KSA	Kerala State Archives
LMS	London Missionary Society
MPP	Madras Political Proceedings
NAI	National Archives of India
NNR	Native Newspaper Reports
OIOC	Oriental and India Office Collections, British Library
PSP	Political and Secret Proceedings
Sec.	Secretary
<u>SMPAP</u>	<u>Sri Mulam Popular Assembly Proceedings</u>
SNDP	Sri Narayana Dharma Paripalana (Yogam)
<u>TAR</u>	<u>Travancore Administration Report</u>
TDC	Trivandrum District Committee, London Missionary Society
<u>TGG</u>	<u>Travancore Government Gazette</u>
TL	Travancore Letters, London Missionary Society
TR	Travancore Reports, London Missionary Society

## GLOSSARY

agraharam : a village or street resided by the Brahmins.

Arattu : a bathing festival, in which the image of the Sri Padmanabha was carried to the sea by the Maharaja.

asan : a teacher in an indigenous school.

avarna : castes outside the varna system.

Ayurveda : Hindu system of medicine.

Bhagavati : the name of a war goddess and tutelary deity of Travancore and other dynasties.

Bhajana Mathom : a place of worship built for the lower castes by the Cochin government.

devaswom : religious endowments and property belonging to temples.

Dewan : the chief minister.

kuppayam : a jacket which was worn largely by Syrian Christians and Muslims.

Hiranyagarbham : a ceremony of rebirth, which gave the Maharaja the status of twice-born.

Illam : the houses mainly of the Nambudiri Brahmins.

makkattayam : a system of patrilineal inheritance.

Mariamman : the goddess who was supposed to cause smallpox.

marumakkattayam : a system of matrilineal inheritance which prevailed in Kerala.

Murajapam : a sexennial ceremony in which Travancore State feasted Malayala Brahmins.

nadu : the territory of a chieftain.

naduvazhi : the ruler of a nadu.

Padmanabha : another name for Vishnu: the tutelary deity of Travancore.

padiyettam : a ceremony in which a new Maharaja was legitimized as Padmanabha Dasa, a servant of the deity.

punja land : land lying submerged in water.

savarna : caste Hindus.

swamydroham : doing mischief to Padmanabha, or criticizing the Maharaja or the ruling family of Travancore.

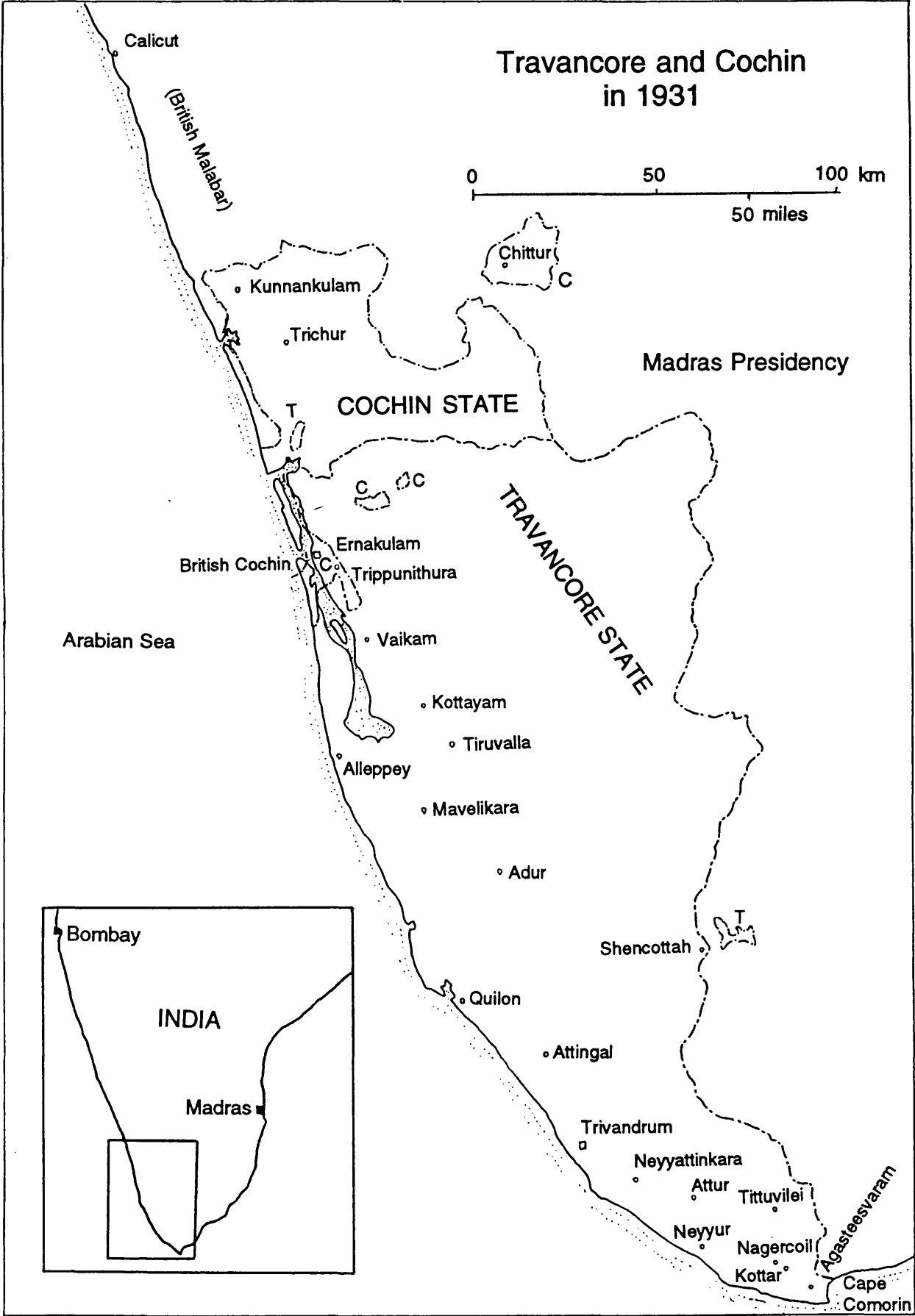
tindal : caste pollution.

Tulapursadanam, or Tulabharam : a ceremony in which the Maharaja was weighed and an equal weight of gold was distributed among Brahmins.

uttupura : a free feeding house for Brahmins.

uriyam : forced labour demanded by the state.

vaidyan : Ayurvedic practitioner.



## INTRODUCTION

This study seeks to show how, during the second half of the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries, a self-declared Hindu state changed itself into a modern state, how the state used Christian missionaries, who had a completely different religious position from itself, during the process of state-building, and how the British authorities were concerned in this process. The main focus of the dissertation is the princely state of Travancore, but the neighbouring state of Cochin is also dealt with to provide a comparative case study.

### Indirect Rule and the Legitimacy of the State

Travancore was situated at the south-western extremity of India. The total area was 7,091 square miles, which was slightly smaller than Wales. In 1931 it had a population of 5,095,973, of which about 84 percent spoke Malayalam and 15 percent Tamil. In 1956 the Malayalam-speaking areas were finally merged into today's Kerala State, and the Tamil areas became the parts of Tamilnadu State. Travancore was one of the larger of India's many princely states.<sup>1</sup> As such, it had its

---

<sup>1</sup> Mysore and Hyderabad were other major princely states in south India. Regarding them, James Manor wrote Political Change in an Indian State: Mysore, 1917-1955 (New Delhi: Manohar, 1977), and Bharati Ray, Hyderabad and British Paramountcy, 1858-1883 (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1988).



own Maharaja but was indirectly ruled by the British. In 1795 the East India Company extracted a treaty of subsidiary alliance from Travancore. Under this treaty, the British offered military support to Travancore in return for a tribute called a 'subsidy'. Following this, in 1800, the first British Resident was sent to Travancore, and thereafter the advice of the Residents played an important role in making government policy in Travancore.

Although no adequate explanations have yet been given by historians why the British decided to rule certain parts of India directly and others indirectly, indirect rule, which affected about two-fifths of the Indian subcontinent, had several advantages for the British. Perhaps the greatest and most obvious advantage was that, as Michael Fisher has recently pointed out, indirect rule cost much less than direct rule. In particular, the 'number of Europeans drawing salaries, pensions, and benefits ... were far less in indirect rule than in direct rule'.<sup>2</sup> At the same time, British economic interest were not much hindered by the absence of direct colonial rule. In many of the indirectly ruled states, including Travancore and Cochin, European firms managed substantial commercial undertakings. Further, after Indian nationalism emerged in British India in the late nineteenth century, it was believed that indirect rule tended not to generate such powerful nationalist movements as were to be

---

<sup>2</sup> Michael Fisher, Indirect Rule in India: Residents and the Residency System, 1764-1857 (New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1991), p.8.

found in British-run territories.<sup>3</sup> In any case, indirect rule was an indispensable apparatus for the British Empire which ruled not only vast areas of India but also other parts of Asia and Africa in this manner. In fact, apart from the princely states in India, all or parts of Malaya, the Persian Gulf, Zanzibar, the South Pacific islands, Nigeria and the Cameroons were ruled indirectly.<sup>4</sup>

What differences, then, did indirect rule make to the society, politics and economy of India? This question, again, has not been adequately answered. However, at least in terms of the legitimacy of the regime, there was undoubtedly a difference. In India, to protect the gods and their temples was regarded as one of the highest duties of kings, and the authority of the Hindu kings was thus ideologically legitimized by his relationship with gods and their temples.<sup>5</sup> Also, as elsewhere, many of the princes in nineteenth- and twentieth-century India claimed a divine or semi-divine status as Hindu kings.<sup>6</sup> The Maharaja of Travancore made a clear claim to divine status. In Travancore, a god called Sri Padmanabha was declared to be the real ruler of the state, and the Maharaja was constitutionally defined as the servant of

---

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp.10-11.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., pp.8, 23, 461.

<sup>5</sup> C.J. Fuller, Servant of the Goddess: The Priests of a South Indian Temple (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984), pp.104, 109.

<sup>6</sup> Adrian C. Mayer, 'Rulership and Divinity: The Case of the Modern Hindu Prince and Beyond', Modern Asian Studies, 25, 4 (1991), p.775.

the tutelary deity. This ideological apparatus worked well. Regarding the authority and divinity of the Maharaja of Travancore, one army officer of the East India Company, who was conducting the operations to repress a rebellion in Travancore against the British, wrote to the Madras government in 1809 that 'the institutions and manners of the people differ much from those of the Carnatic [east coast] people. [They] look up to the Rajah with a degree of respect, bordering on devotion'. The officer continued: 'that ancient relations of the two Governments [of Madras and Travancore] are to be re-established will I am confident produce the most conspicuous result to our operations'.<sup>7</sup> The Madras government 'entirely' approved his view.<sup>8</sup>

Generally, the firmness of the regime of the princes was one of the criteria when the British considered the annexation of the princely state. In other words, the British tended to annex the states in which the legitimacy of the state was weak. In 1800 the Nawab of Arcot was forced to cede his territory to the Madras Government because of the weakness of the regime.<sup>9</sup> Also, there is no doubt that the 'doctrine of lapse', which Dalhousie (Governor-General, 1848-1856) used to annex a number of princely states, was effective, because

---

<sup>7</sup> Lt.Col. Sentleger to Ch. Sec., 13 Feb. 1809, Tinnevelly Collectorate Records, vol.3569, Tamilnadu Archives.

<sup>8</sup> G. Buchanan, Ch. Sec., to Sentleger, 22 Feb. 1809, Tinnevelly Collectorate Records, vol.3569, Tamilnadu Archives.

<sup>9</sup> C.A. Bayly, Indian Society and the Making of the British Empire (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), p.93.

usually there would have been more confusion regarding the legitimacy of a regime when no direct heirs were present to resist such annexation. At least in part because of its firmly established legitimacy as a Hindu state, Travancore continued to avoid annexation not only in 1809 but also throughout the remaining years of its history up to 1947. Meanwhile, the British paid considerable attention not only to the religious roles and responsibilities of the princes but also to their own religious roles in British India. In the directly ruled areas, they tried to take the Hindu kings' functions of the protection of the temples, though eventually their authority could not be legitimized by these attempts, and this attempt was finally abandoned in 1842 largely due to protests from the Christian missionaries.<sup>10</sup>

Thus, this aspect of a political legitimacy grounded in religion was clearly one of the main differences between the princely states and British India. However, scholars have not paid adequate attention to the function of religion in the princely states in the nineteenth and twentieth centuries. This study seeks to add some knowledge to this area by examining how Travancore State maintained the divinity and authority of the Maharaja and how the ideology of the Hindu state functioned and changed. In particular, the nature of the

---

<sup>10</sup> Fuller, Servants of the Goddess, p.109; Arjun Appadurai, Worship and Conflict under Colonial Rule: A South Indian Case (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1981), p.105, 163. The recent development of Hindu nationalism is undoubtedly seeking the revival of this 'traditional' religious function by the state. This also suggests that the alliance of religion with state power still has considerable ability to attract people in India.

state is investigated through its interaction with Christian missionaries, largely because its character can be more clearly seen in relation to institutions which vigorously propagated a completely different religion.

### 'Modernization' and Social Change

The period with which this study mainly deals is from 1858 until 1936. This is largely because the society and politics of Travancore changed considerably during this period. In particular, from the late nineteenth century onwards, great change occurred in caste and communal identities as well as in the relationship between the missionaries and the political authorities, and the period which this study covers is considered essential to explain the change. In the year 1858 Sir T. Madava Row, a renowned Indian administrator, was formally appointed Dewan of Travancore and began to make energetic efforts to modernize the state. His efforts to introduce a number of reforms into the administration of the Travancore government, together with growing commercialization and improving communications, helped transform Travancore. As Robin Jeffrey has pointed out, the Izhavas and Syrian Christians took great advantage of a commercializing economy and became increasingly affluent, while the once-overwhelming dominance of the Nayars gradually declined. Land was transferred from the Nayars to the Izhavas and Christians, and a variety of castes and communities began to demand more jobs in the 'modernized' administration, challenging the monopoly

of the Nayers and the Brahmins.<sup>11</sup>

One of the trends of modern South Asian historiography has been to deny the view that Indian society was static and unchanged until the British Raj intervened to destroy what was formerly seen as 'the feudal base of Indian society'.<sup>12</sup> Recently much work has been done to show how, well before 1800, Indian villages were influenced by the development of commercialization and how a variety of groups were in competition for higher status in the relatively fluid system of caste and social hierarchy.<sup>13</sup> It has become clear that Indian society before the British Raj was far more dynamic than was formerly recognized. In this sense, Jeffrey's statement about Travancore - made in 1976 - about 'a society which had survived fundamentally unchanged for 700 years', now appears open to considerable doubt.<sup>14</sup>

However, it is equally true that the social, economic and political changes which occurred in the second half of the nineteenth century were more widespread and deeper than those previously experienced. In particular, in terms of caste and communal movements, it should be noted that almost all the castes and communities participated in the movements in

---

<sup>11</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics in Travancore, 1847-1908 (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976), pp.249, 265-9.

<sup>12</sup> A.R. Desai, Social Background of Indian Nationalism (Bombay: Oxford University Press, 1948), p.26.

<sup>13</sup> For example, see David Ludden, Peasant History in South India (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1985).

<sup>14</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.265.

Travancore. Even the lowest castes, such as the Pulayas and the Parayas, formed caste associations and demanded fairer treatment from the state and the higher castes.

But what was the nature of these new movements? Susan Bayly has pointed out that the Izhava movement for temple-entry in the 1920s and 1930s was 'a classic south Indian honours dispute', and further argued that 'in almost all these cases the basic principles were the same: the participants were seeking to enhance their ritual status and honour...'.<sup>15</sup> However, almost every movement from the late nineteenth century onwards demanded the right of education - something which had been impossible previously. But Bayly seems to lose sight of this fact. The lower castes demanded more opportunities for education because they believed that education was an important means of social mobility. Before at least 1800, education was given in indigenous schools, and it had nothing to do with social mobility because most occupations were hereditary. The idea that education was almost essential to find better jobs and to attain higher status did not exist in pre-modern India. Even though the demand for education was expressed in terms of 'traditional categories', i.e., caste or community, the basic principle underlying them seems to have been very individualistic and 'modern'.

Of course, the caste and communal movements from the late

---

<sup>15</sup> Susan Bayly, Saints and Goddesses and Kings: Muslims and Christians in South Indian Society, 1700-1900 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989), p.448.

nineteenth century onwards shared some characteristics with previous movements. But they simultaneously had some 'modern' elements as well, and the spread of the movements was much wider and deeper than previous ones had been. And this was largely the result of massive social, political and economic changes in the second half of the nineteenth century. This study finishes in the year 1936, when the Temple Entry Proclamation was issued in Travancore to enable the lower castes to enter most temples in the state. This was one of the principal results of the changes brought about since the late nineteenth century and, more broadly, of the modernization of the state which Madava Row enthusiastically started in 1858.

#### Related Studies and their Problems

Several scholars have written about missionary activities in Travancore and some aspects of the missionaries' interactions with the political authorities. But their works have failed to explain the very complex nature of missionary activities, largely because they have regarded the roles of missionaries and political authorities as more or less fixed rather than dynamically changing. In his book The Decline of Nayar Dominance, Robin Jeffrey has argued that the social and economic changes which occurred in the second half of the nineteenth century made Syrian Christians and some avarna castes (non-caste Hindus) wealthy and assertive and that, as a result, the dominant position of the Nayars was greatly challenged and became unstable. In his argument, the



activities of the missionaries were one of the principal factors that promoted this change. In other words, the missionaries were prepared to 'challenge' Travancore State, and the state strove to conciliate them.<sup>16</sup> However, as will be seen in this study, the missionaries and the state much more frequently co-operated than clashed, and the state at times even expected the missionaries to play the role of persuading the low-caste Christians to be obedient to the existing order. Jeffrey's argument seems unable to explain these aspects of their relationship.

In addition, in his view, the attitude of the British authorities also seems to be a very fixed one. Certainly, he has examined the relationship between Travancore State and the British authorities in another article, and there he has suggested four types of relationship. But he is clearly assuming that the interest of the British was always in 'modernizing' Travancore or keeping the state 'fairly closely in step with British administration and ideas'.<sup>17</sup> He has not paid enough attention to the fundamental changes in British attitude towards Travancore, which clearly occurred from the late nineteenth century onwards, and the meaning of the changes accompanied by Lord Minto's well-known Udaipur speech of 1909, which openly declared a British policy of 'non-

---

<sup>16</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics in Travancore, 1847-1908 (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976), pp.83,265.

<sup>17</sup> Robin Jeffrey, 'The Politics of "Indirect Rule": Types of Relationship among Rulers, Ministers and Residents in a "Native State"', Journal of Commonwealth and Comparative Politics, 8:3, 1975, pp.262,275.

interference in the internal affairs of Native States'.<sup>18</sup> The trend towards non-interference has not been sufficiently considered.

Moreover, Jeffrey has almost totally ignored the importance of state rituals and the religious functions of the Maharaja. He seems to consider that these 'traditions' were merely the remnants of the declining and increasingly irrelevant pre-modern system. But, on the contrary, these rituals and the ideology associated with them functioned very effectively in Travancore during this period, even though the state had to adopt some 'democratic' measures to reinforce its legitimacy, as we shall see in Chapter 1. In a sense, Travancore State attempted to modernize itself by using such rituals and associated ideology to secure more effective legitimacy for the regime. Resistance to the introduction of modern administration, for example, should have been greatly lessened because people knew that the Maharaja himself initiated the reform, and so carried the weight of his semi-divine authority. Modernization while maintaining the essentially Hindu character was an underlying official policy repeatedly expressed by the Travancore government. Also, it was partly for this reason that the British became very careful in intervening in the domestic affairs of Travancore when Indian nationalism emerged. In other words, the British tried to

---

<sup>18</sup> Quoted in D.A. Low, 'Laissez-faire and Traditional Rulership in Princely India', in Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), p.374.

prevent the development of Indian nationalism in the princely states by keeping the people loyal to their traditional rulers. Overt British intervention in these states was considered dangerous because it might stimulate anti-British feeling, as this study shows.

Turning to other writers, Dick Kooiman has pointed out, in his book on the London Missionary Society in Travancore, several important facts, such as the class background of the missionaries and the similarities between 'Christianization' and Sanskritization. But he too has failed to pay enough attention to the changing aspects of the missionaries' relationship with political authorities. It is true that he has described some stages of the relationship between the missionaries and colonial authorities. But his interest seems to finish by the 1850s despite the title of the book.<sup>19</sup> Moreover, he seems to assume that the relationship depended mostly on the personal attitude of the British Residents. He has written that 'Not all Residents had the same sympathy with the work of the mission. Yet generally, the local British officials responded favourable to missionary appeals and initiatives, giving the LMS a position of some influence and making the local people view the mission as an authority close to officialdom yet much more accessible'.<sup>20</sup> But this study deals with some rather fundamental changes in British

---

<sup>19</sup> Dick Kooiman, Conversion and Social Equality in India: The London Missionary Society in South Travancore in the 19th Century (New Delhi: Manohar, 1989), pp.26-32, 145-7.

<sup>20</sup> Ibid., p.198.

attitudes. In particular, it seeks to show that, as has been noted, there was a trend towards non-interference and that it became increasingly difficult for the missionaries to expect some support from the British authorities.

J.W. Gladstone is another contributor to the history of the missionaries in Travancore. He has argued that the conversion movements in Kerala were 'the conscious attempts of certain sections of the people for their emancipation', and that the missionaries and the British authorities were the agents which promoted that 'emancipation'.<sup>21</sup> I will raise some doubts in Chapter 5 as to whether the conversion of the lower castes can be understood as efforts for their 'emancipation' or not. But, apart from this, his view of the roles of the missionaries and the British authorities is also static and fixed. Partly for this reason, the relationship between the missionaries and Travancore State is only seen to be confrontational in his argument. He asserts that 'the Travancore Government and its officials could not reject the plea of the missionary completely, because of his connection with the British political authorities'.<sup>22</sup> Contrary to Gladstone and other previous studies, this thesis seeks to show that the relationship between the missionaries, Travancore State and the British authorities changed greatly over time mainly from the late nineteenth century onwards largely as a result of the

---

<sup>21</sup> J.W. Gladstone, Protestant Christianity and People's Movements in Kerala: A Study of Christian Mass Movements in Relation to Neo-Hindu Socio-Religious Movements in Kerala, 1850-1936 (Trivandrum: Seminary Publications, 1984), pp.421-2.

<sup>22</sup> J.W. Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, p.203.

growing influence of Indian nationalism, religious revivalism, and caste and communal movements.

### Outline of the Thesis

This study examines changes in the relationship between Christian missionaries, Travancore State and the British authorities. The main attention is paid to the significant social and political change that occurred from the late nineteenth century onwards and its influence over the relationship between the missionaries, the state and the British. In particular, this study seeks to show, with the advent of Indian nationalism, Hindu revivalism, and caste and communal movements, the position of the Travancore state was considerably enhanced compared with those of the missionaries and the British. That is, the British came to avoid intervening in social and religious customs in Travancore, which allowed this princely state to become more autonomous. Simultaneously, the state became increasingly hostile to the missionaries, and the missionaries, who found it increasingly difficult to attract any substantial help from the British authorities, came to pay more regard to the Maharaja and his government. However, this study also seeks to show that, despite the clear differences in their religious positions, Christian missionaries and the Travancore state maintained a largely favourable relationship. That is to say, the state needed missionary activities for its efforts to become a modern state, while the missionaries in turn needed the help

of the political authorities - especially the Travancore government - for their activities.

Thus, this thesis examines the political and social evolution of Travancore and (to a lesser extent) Cochin, and economic change and commercial development during the period is not directly dealt with here. That is not because I think that the economy is unimportant to an understanding of Travancore society, but because economic change in the second half of the nineteenth century has been studied fairly fully by other scholars, especially Robin Jeffrey.<sup>23</sup> Therefore, this study pays attention to a less explored area - the political relationship between the missionaries, the state and the British authorities.

Chapter 1 examines the nature of the Hindu state and its efforts to maintain its legitimacy as a Hindu state as well as to modernize itself as a 'model state'. The chapter looks at the state's relationship with the British authorities and their influence over policy-making processes in Travancore. Chapter 2 investigates the relationship between Christian missionaries and the British authorities. In particular, it can be seen that, for a variety of reasons, the British became very reluctant to intervene in social and religious matters in Travancore from the late nineteenth century onwards, and that the missionaries practically lost their support. Chapters

---

<sup>23</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, chapters 3 and 4. For land reform and agrarian change, see T.C. Varghese, Agrarian Change and Economic Consequences: Land Tenures in Kerala, 1850-1960 (Bombay: Allied Publishers, 1970); M.A. Oommen, Land Reforms and Socio-economic Change in Kerala (Madras: CLS, 1971).

3 and 4 examine the development of education and medicine in Travancore, as case studies of both modernization and mission-state relations. In particular, it is shown that the two sides actively co-operated in these matters, despite the differences in their religious positions.

Chapter 5 investigates government policy towards the lower castes and shows that the state was concerned about the movements of the lower castes for two main reasons. One was to prevent conversion; and the other was to maintain social and economic order which the lower castes had supported largely as agricultural labourers. We will see how the missionaries were used by the state to achieve the latter aim. Finally, the case of Cochin is dealt with in Chapter 6. This chapter seeks to show that missionary activities were far less successful in Cochin, and partly for this reason, the process of modernization was considerably delayed in Cochin compared with Travancore.

#### The Nature and Problems of Source Materials

The source material used in this study largely consisted of government and missionary records. The government sources were mainly the Madras Political Proceedings, Crown Representative Records, and Political and Secret Department Papers. These sources include the correspondence between the British Resident and the British authorities in Madras, Calcutta, Delhi and London. They also contain letters from the Dewans of Travancore and other officials in the Travancore

government. As to the records of the Travancore government, in 1992 permission of the Kerala State Archives to read the documents produced before 1917 was not available because of their 'brittle' condition. As a result, only the records classified as 'Confidential Files' are used for this study. They mainly include the correspondence between the Chief Secretary to the Travancore government and other government officials.

What is the value of these government sources? Perhaps the greatest value is that they reveal, to a great extent, how a certain policy was devised and pursued by the Travancore government or by the British governments in Madras, Calcutta (or, later, Delhi) and London. The Residents had easy access to the Dewans and the Maharajas, and therefore their reports contain reliable views of the ministers and the rulers. As to the British authorities, these sources include the documents of the Madras government, the Government of India and the India Office. Thus, they are of course of great help in investigating British attitudes towards Travancore. However, one of the major problems of these sources is that they were mostly written by higher officials and, as a result, they do not contain enough information about the attitudes and views of non-official Indians. Therefore, I used the Native Newspaper Reports, which contain articles from a number of newspapers published in Travancore, Cochin and the Madras Presidency. These are particularly useful in trying to establish the views of the Indian middle classes. Also, the government sources barely comprise any information about what



was happening at village level or about the very low castes. In this sense, missionaries sources, which will be mentioned next, are able to add some useful additional information.

The missionary sources used in this study were largely found at the Council for World Mission (formerly the London Missionary Society) Archives in the library of SOAS and the Church Missionary Society Archives in Birmingham University. The Salvation Army International Heritage Centre in London also preserves some records on the activities of this religious organization in Travancore. Although original letters and reports have been lost, some printed reports preserved there provide important sources for the history of the Salvation Army in Travancore. In addition, the libraries of the United Theological College at Bangalore and of the CMS (Church Missionary Society) College at Kottayam preserve some printed sources which are rarely available in other places.

What is the value of the missionary sources? Perhaps the most important point is, as we have noted, that they contain a great deal of information about certain localities as well as the lower castes or untouchables. As G.A. Oddie has pointed out, the missionaries, unlike government officers, spent 'many more years in the one locality and, generally speaking, had more extensive first-hand knowledge of local conditions'.<sup>24</sup> In particular, since the majority of the Christian converts were from the lower castes, the missionaries paid great attention to these castes, while the political authorities

---

<sup>24</sup> Geoffrey A. Oddie, Hindu and Christian in South-East India (London: Curzon Press, 1991), p.6.

largely ignored them. In addition, missionary sources also reflect some ideological trends in society, including religious revivalism and Indian nationalism. Missionaries were certainly sensitive to the attitudes of the Hindus, especially those of the higher castes. This was not only because the higher castes were the important target of their proselytizing activities, even though the converts from them were very few, but also because anti-missionary feelings, which were frequently accompanied with religious revivalism and nationalism, could become a great threat to missionary activities. They even became a real threat to their own safety at times. Thus, the missionaries tended to record these trends in society.

Further, their sources reveal the attitudes of the political authorities towards religion, social customs, the lower castes and the missionaries themselves. Basically, it was necessary for the missionaries to have a favourable relationship with the political authorities, as will be argued at length in this study. They needed permission to work in the princely states, and not all the princely states permitted their activities nor were the British authorities always friendly towards them. In addition, they undoubtedly needed government protection to work among a 'heathen' population, which was potentially hostile to their activities. Also, more practically, the missionaries were seldom entirely self-financing and needed large sums of money in the form of government grants to run their schools and hospitals. Thus, to maintain a favourable relationship with the political

authorities was definitely a necessity for them. Consequently, they had to pay great attention to government attitudes and shifts in policy.

But how should we deal with the biases of the missionaries and their records? Regarding this matter, Robin Jeffrey has stated that 'Their biases, because they are generally so glaring, rarely detract from the usefulness of their accounts of events'.<sup>25</sup> But it might be useful to consider their biases in more detail. Perhaps the greatest problem in their sources is that they tended to exaggerate certain aspects of Indian society as well as their own activities. On the one hand, they had, to be sure, 'an attitude of moral superiority and a belief in his own exclusive righteousness'.<sup>26</sup> Consequently, as Dick Kooiman has pointed out, they tended to see Indian society through their 'heavily biased' views such as 'dark heathenism' and 'evil habits and barbarious customs'.<sup>27</sup> Thus, their reports are likely to contain exaggerated accounts of what they considered to be the 'evils' of Indian society and to lose sight of the actual and more comprehensive functions of certain matters in the society. On the other hand, they had to prove that their activities were worthwhile in order to justify the spending of large sums of money which were largely raised by donations and subscriptions in Britain and other

---

<sup>25</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.xi.

<sup>26</sup> K.M. Panikkar, Asia and Western Dominance: A Survey of the Vasco Da Gama Epoch of Asian History, 1448-1498 (London: George Allen & Unwin, 1959), p.297.

<sup>27</sup> Kooiman, Conversion and Social Equality in India, p.5.

places. Accordingly, the historian has to be aware that they might have reported their activities as being more successful than they actually were. Therefore, in order to examine Indian society more correctly and comprehensively, we have to be very careful when we deal with missionary sources. However, despite these problems, missionary sources are, from the perspective of this thesis, an exceptionally rich source, a partial corrective to government source materials and a valuable means of gaining access to local-level changes - the society and politics of India.

## CHAPTER 1

### TRAVANCORE STATE AND BRITISH PARAMOUNTCY

#### Introduction

Travancore State had two distinctive features. While it was known as a Hindu state which had preserved a purely Hindu nature, it was also called a model state ruled by 'enlightened' Maharajas. These two features, in some ways contradictory in others complementary, formed the basis for the policies of this princely state. The Maharajas and Dewans consciously pursued these two goals, and they largely succeeded in their efforts. However, Travancore was under the supervision of the Madras government, and therefore the state had to accept its 'advice' through the British Resident. The policy of the Travancore government was thus considerably influenced by the attitudes and policies of the paramount power as well. In this chapter, the nature of the Hindu state and its change will firstly be examined, then, how the 'enlightened' policy came to be adopted by the Maharajas and Dewans. Finally, by examining the process by which some Dewans were selected, the relationship between the Maharajas, the Dewans and the paramount power will be investigated.

### Travancore as a Hindu State

Travancore was known as a 'purely Hindu state'. That was mainly because, unlike other parts of India, the area had not come under Muslim rule and therefore retained its 'ancient Hindu type and character'. This notion of an unconquered Hindu state was repeatedly expressed throughout its history.<sup>1</sup> But what constituted a Hindu state? Or which factors comprised the Hindu nature of Travancore? Undoubtedly, the dedication of the state to Sri Padmanabha, the local appellation of Vishnu, was one of the most important factors. This dedication was initiated by Maharaja Martanda Varma in 1750. When Martanda Varma (Maharaja, 1729-1758) ascended the throne of Travancore, which was then called Venad, it was one of nadus or principalities in today's Kerala. What Martanda Varma aimed to do was to strengthen his power by crushing the 'feudal' elements within his kingdom and, at the same time, to expand its border by conquering the neighbouring chieftains.<sup>2</sup>

After capturing and executing the sons of the previous Raja and also capturing 'rebel leaders', he absorbed Attingal, and other neighbouring nadus. He extended his kingdom to the

---

<sup>1</sup> For example, Nagam Aiya, The Travancore State Manual (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1906), vol.3, p.525; SMPAP, 1st Meeting, 1904, p.3; The Maharani told an European guest in the 1930s that 'As a race we have never been conquered. The Moghuls who overran Northern India did not come as far south as Travancore, so we have never had to submit to purdah. The Hindu women have never known the veil'. Rosita Forbes, India of the Princes, (London: Book Club, 1939), p.213.

<sup>2</sup> A. Sreedhara Menon, A Survey of Kerala History (Kottayam: National Book Stall, 1967), pp.261,272.

frontiers of Cochin by 1757 when he concluded a treaty of alliance with Cochin against the Zamorin of Calicut.<sup>3</sup> In addition, Martanda Varma introduced a number of reforms into his administration. He organized a new public service based on efficiency and loyal service so as to prevent the monopoly of certain families. The village and district administration was also reorganized; and a regular survey of the land was undertaken for the first time. He also declared the pepper trade a state monopoly in 1743.<sup>4</sup> Thus he radically challenged the existing order by introducing a number of reforms as well as by expanding his territory. Under these circumstances, he needed to establish his authority on a more rigid basis. For this purpose, Martanda Varma 'invented' or revived a variety of rituals and ceremonials.<sup>5</sup> The dedication of the state to Sri Padmanabha, the tutelary deity of his family, was certainly the most important of them.

On 17 January 1750, Martanda Varma, accompanied by the royal family and the Dalawah (chief minister), proceeded to the Sri Padmanabhaswamy Temple in Trivandrum and declared that

---

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp.274,280; Padmanabha Menon, A History of Kerala (1924-37, reprinted New Delhi: Asian Educational Service, 1983), vol.2, p.23.

<sup>4</sup> A.P. Ibrahim Kunju, 'The Administration of Travancore in the Eighteenth Century', Journal of Kerala Studies, 2, 4, (1975), pp.425-36.

<sup>5</sup> As Eric Hobsbawm and others have pointed out, many of the traditions, which were considered very ancient in their origin, were invented comparatively recently: Eric Hobsbawm and Terence Ranger (eds), The Invention of Tradition (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993, first published 1983). This matter will be dealt with later in this chapter as well.

he was the vassal of the deity from that day forward. Thus, he assumed the title of Sri Padmanabha Dasa, servant of Sri Padmanabha, and this title was thereafter adopted by every Maharaja in the ceremony of padiyettam, by which a new Maharaja did a full prostration and laid his sword on the platform in the temple. This sword was carried to the sanctum by a priest and, after being consecrated, was returned to the Maharaja. The sword became a symbol of his status and power, and he was then invested with the title of 'Sri Padmanabha Dasa'.<sup>6</sup> This relationship between the Maharaja and Sri Padmanabha had 'never been lost sight of by his successors',<sup>7</sup> and as late as in 1944, Sir C. P. Ramaswami Aiyar (Dewan, 1936-1949) stated that 'the Maharaja of Travancore is the Viceroy administering the State, and the Deity is the Ruler of Travancore'.<sup>8</sup>

However, it was not a unique feature of Travancore that the Maharaja served a deity as its servant. In fact, all ruling families in India had tutelary deities,<sup>9</sup> and they were certainly used in similar ways to give the aura of divinity and authority to the rulers. That is to say, 'By being the

---

<sup>6</sup> Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore (1878, reprinted Trivandrum: Government Press, 1983), p.127.; Adrian C. Mayer, 'Rulership and Divinity: The Case of the Modern Hindu Prince and Beyond', Modern Asian Studies, 25, 4, 1991, pp.771-3.

<sup>7</sup> SMPAP, 1st Meeting, 1904, p.3.

<sup>8</sup> P.G. Sahasranama Iyer, Selections from the Writings and Speeches of Sachivottama Sir C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1945), p.286.

<sup>9</sup> Mayer, 'Rulership and Divinity', p.770.



greatest servant of the sovereign deity, the human king sustains and displays his rule over men'.<sup>10</sup> What distinguished Travancore from many other princely states was that the relationship was formally established in a constitutional sense by openly declaring the dedication and repeating it publicly.

This measure appears to have been widely known and highly successful. Shungoony Menon wrote in 1878 that 'since that time [i.e., 1750] the people of Travancore have had a devoted attachment and sacred regard for the royal house, and this has continued unchanged up to this day'.<sup>11</sup> In 1937, Mahadev Desai, the secretary of Mahatma Gandhi, also wrote that 'I suppose every child in Travancore knows that the Maharajas in Travancore are known as Padmanabhadas'.<sup>12</sup> Under these circumstances, criticizing the Maharaja or the ruling family was regarded as swamydroham, doing mischief to the deity.<sup>13</sup> In fact, it was quite rare for the Maharajas themselves to be criticized regarding their policies. Even the missionaries did not openly criticize the Maharajas,<sup>14</sup> and those who were

---

<sup>10</sup> Arjun Appadurai, Worship and Conflict under Colonial Rule, (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1981), p.51.

<sup>11</sup> Shungoony Menon, A History of Travancore, p.127.

<sup>12</sup> Mahadev Desai, The Epic of Travancore, (Ahmedabad: Navajivan Karyalaya, 1937), p.55.

<sup>13</sup> Shungoony Menon, A History of Travancore, p.127; droham means 'injuring'.

<sup>14</sup> Rev. John Cox, an LMS missionary, was certainly one of the few exceptions. He wrote in 1857 that 'His Highness ... has shown that he too far coincides with the unfavourable views of the Dewan, and he has even expressed his great

criticized were the Dewans and not the Maharajas who selected the Dewans. In other words, one of the principal functions of the Dewan was to be a buffer which protected the Maharaja from criticism. P. Rajagopalachari (Dewan, 1907-1914) stated in his note on administration that 'it is an accepted maxim that it is not competent to any person or authority to go behind any particular order, and to enquire whether the Dewan had taken His Highness's sanction to it or not', though 'every matter of any importance has to up to His Highness and has to receive his approval before an order of the Darbar [government] issues'.<sup>15</sup>

As a servant of Sri Padmanabha, the Maharaja of Travancore observed a number of rituals, most of which were started by Martanda Varma in the mid-eighteenth century. The Hiranyagarbham, literally 'golden womb', was one of the most important state rituals. This was one of the sixteen Mahadanams, or great donations.<sup>16</sup> It was described in a Sanskrit work along with the Tulapurushadanam, and both rituals

---

concern at the increase of Missionaries in late years and their dispersion over the country...', John Cox, Travancore: Its Present Ruin Shown and the Remedy Sought, in a Correspondence with the Government of Madras in the Years 1855-1857 (Nagercoil: LMS Press, 1857), p.C9.

<sup>15</sup> P. Rajagopalachari, Note on the Administration of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914), p.3.

<sup>16</sup> It was also performed in Tanjore and in some of the poligar domains in south India. Susan Bayly, Saints and Goddesses and Kings: Muslims and Christians in South Indian society, 1700-1900 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989), p.66.

were performed after the Maharaja's accession to the throne.<sup>17</sup> The object of this ritual was to raise a king 'from the ranks of Sudra caste ... to the position and dignity of a Brahman, or as near this as it is possible'.<sup>18</sup> In this ceremony, a golden lotus which was exactly equal to the weight of the Raja himself was prepared. Into the golden vessel, which was considered to be a cow's womb, the five products of a cow (milk, curd, butter, urine and dung) were put, and the Raja entered the vessel. Then the cover was put on the vessel, and the Raja dipped into the water five times, during which the officiating priests repeated prayers. By emerging from the vessel, the Raja gained a new birth, which granted him the status of being 'twice-born'. The golden lotus was afterwards broken up and distributed among the Raja's personal attendants, the Brahmins and others.<sup>19</sup> Thus the Hiranyagarbham was a ceremony of rebirth. In Travancore, almost all the Maharajas after Martanda Varma performed this ceremony. The name of the Maharajas, the years of their reigns and the year in which this ritual was performed are as follows:<sup>20</sup>

---

<sup>17</sup> Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore, pp.44,45.

<sup>18</sup> Samuel Mateer, The Land of Charity: A Descriptive Account of Travancore and its People (London: John Snow and Co., 1871), p.169.

<sup>19</sup> Ibid., p.170; Kunju, 'The Administration of Travancore', pp.443-4.

<sup>20</sup> Velu Pillai, Travancore State Manual (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1940), vol.4, p.571.

Martanda Varma (1729-1758) .....	1751
Rama Varma (1758-1798) .....	1761
Bala Rama Varma (1798-1810) .....	1801
Swathi Thirunal Rama Varma (1829-1847) .....	1834
Uthram Thirunal Martanda Varma (1847-1860) .	1854
Ayilyam Thirunal Rama Varma (1860-1880) ....	1871
Sri Mulam Thirunal Rama Varma (1885-1924) ..	1894

The Tulapurusadanam, or Tulabharam, was another ritual.<sup>21</sup> Weighing the body of the Raja against an equal weight in gold and distributing the gold mainly among Brahmins were the main features of the Tulapurusadanam. Although several ancient kings of Travancore performed this ceremony, it became a 'regular feature' after Martanda Varma. In the nineteenth century, it was held at least in the years 1829, 1850 and 1870.<sup>22</sup>

Another important state ritual was the Murajapam which was one of the biggest ceremonies held in the Sri Padmanabhaswamy Temple in Trivandrum, the capital of Travancore.<sup>23</sup> This ceremony was also originated by Martanda Varma in 1750 with a view to 'expiate the sins of war and annexation of territory'.<sup>24</sup> It was held every six years and was supposed to be performed mainly for the defence of the kingdom and people,

---

<sup>21</sup> Tula means 'scale', purusa 'man', and danam 'gift'. Bharam indicates 'burden'.

<sup>22</sup> Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore, pp.41,44,53; Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.173; Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.4, p.56. Kunju, 'The Administration of Travancore', p.422.

<sup>23</sup> Mura means 'a course of recitation', and japam 'prayer or chanting of Vedic hymns': Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.2, p.277.

<sup>24</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, p.608.

the procuring of a regular supply of rain, and the general safety and prosperity of the country.<sup>25</sup> For this ceremony, which lasted for fifty-six days, only the Malayala Brahmins such as the Nambudiris and the Pottis were invited.<sup>26</sup> Perhaps the most important part of the ceremony was the subjugation which the Maharaja expressed to the high priest of the Nambudiris. When the chief priest with others who had travelled from Cochin to Trivandrum as a part of this ceremony came near the palace, the Maharaja joined in the procession and officiated for a short time as one of the bearers of the palanquin of the priest. Then the Maharaja prostrated himself at the feet of this high priest, placed him on a golden seat and even washed his feet. In 1863 about 60,000 persons attended the Murajapam from all parts of Travancore, and the Travancore government provided food, lodging and other facilities for them.<sup>27</sup> Not surprisingly, huge sums of revenue were spent on this ceremony. In 1875-76, Rs.182,009 was spent, which was more than the amount spent on education in that year.<sup>28</sup> As late as 1911, the estimated cost for this ceremony was about Rs.500,000, which was about four per cent of the

---

<sup>25</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.167.

<sup>26</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.1, pp.608-9.

<sup>27</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, pp.167-8; Nagam Aiya also wrote that 'about five thousand guests assembled in the capital in 1905': Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.2, p.279.

<sup>28</sup> Ag. Resident to Ch. Sec., 18 Dec. 1877, No.89, in G.O. No.27 Dec. 1877, MPP, OIOC.

total state expenditure for that year.<sup>29</sup>

The Arattu, or bathing festival, was held twice a year, in April and October in connection with the Sri Padmanabhaswamy Temple. It lasted for ten days, and on the tenth day, the image of Sri Padmanabha was carried in a procession from its temple in Trivandrum to the sea to be bathed. The Maharaja played an essential role in this ceremony as well as in other state rituals. In this procession, he carried a naked sword and a shield, and Nambudiri priests bore the images of Padmanabha, Narasinha and Krishna behind the Maharaja.<sup>30</sup>

In addition to Sri Padmanabha, the Goddess Bhagavati played an important role in Travancore. She was 'the War Goddess' and a tutelary deity of almost all the dynasties of Kerala. The ruling family of Travancore also had a Bhagavati temple at Attingal near Trivandrum.<sup>31</sup> This goddess was supposed to rule over the minor divinities or demons worshipped by the lower orders of Hindus and her presence in a village was believed to protect the people from epidemics and other disasters or from the evil influence of devils.<sup>32</sup> The Maharaja visited

---

<sup>29</sup> Prachina Taraka, 14 June 1911, in NNR 1911, p.876; The expenditure on Murajapam was mainly paid from the budget for the Devaswoms, and therefore the expenditure of this department rose sharply every sixth year. In 1917-18, for example, it became Rs.1,519,370 from Rs.1,133,590 of the previous year. The increase of about Rs.380,000 was largely 'due to the Murajapam ceremony'. TAR 1917-18, p.7.

<sup>30</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, pp.165-6. This procession is held even today by the former royal family.

<sup>31</sup> A. Sreedhara Menon, Social and Cultural History of Kerala, (New Delhi: Sterling Publishers, 1979), p.189.

<sup>32</sup> Nagam Aiya, Travancore State Manual, vol.2, p.54.

Attingal once a year in January. He went to the Bhagavati Temple in procession wearing no covering on his head or chest. The Maharaja then approached the sword which a priest of the Potti Brahmin put on the altar.<sup>33</sup> Then the priest came to the Maharaja with a measure of rice and performed a certain ritual.<sup>34</sup>

Apart from these state rituals, the management of the uttupuras was another important feature of Travancore as a Hindu state. The uttupuras were institutions in which the Brahmins were fed at the state expense. In 1906, there were forty-two uttupuras in Travancore, which were situated mostly in connection with the principal temples.<sup>35</sup> The uttupuras were 'very ancient institutions' and were also maintained by other local chiefs in Malabar before the conquest of Martanda Varma. Although these institutions were supposed to have been established chiefly for giving food to Brahmin travellers, they were in practice used by Brahmin residents as well as travellers. Consequently, a number of Brahmins came from British India with their families and formed their colonies around the uttupuras.<sup>36</sup> The management of the uttupuras was undoubtedly considered one of the most important functions as

---

<sup>33</sup> The Potti was used to designate all Malayala Brahmins except the Nambudiris. Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, p.286.

<sup>34</sup> Samuel Mateer, Native Life in Travancore (London: W.H. Allen, 1883), pp.124-5.

<sup>35</sup> Nagam Aiya, Travancore State Manual, vol.3, p.525; Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.181.

<sup>36</sup> Rajagopalachari, Note, p.57.

a Hindu state, and a very large part of its revenue was used for their upkeep. In 1864-65, for example, the Travancore government spent Rs.306,869, which was as much as 7.6 per cent of the total expenditure of the state for that year.<sup>37</sup> A number of criticisms against these 'wasteful' institutions were voiced by the missionaries and even non-Brahmin Malayalis.<sup>38</sup> Samuel Mateer, an LMS missionary, stated in 1883 that 'The Christians strongly object to this expenditure of the public funds against their convictions of right ... Intelligent Sudras are far from content with the present state of things.'<sup>39</sup> But these institutions, as well as the state rituals, continued at least throughout the nineteenth century virtually without any change. It was not until 1909-10 that the Travancore government, in response to public pressure, conducted some substantial revisions regarding these institutions. In this reform, the government abolished eight uttupuras, fixed a reduced scale of expenditure for the remaining thirty-three, and laid down the number of travellers and resident poor to be fed there.<sup>40</sup>

The management of the devaswoms or religious institutions was another important function of Travancore State, though the state had 'no concern with the management of any temples'

---

<sup>37</sup> TAR, 1864-65, p.29.

<sup>38</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics in Travancore, 1847-1908 (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976), pp.111-2.

<sup>39</sup> Mateer, Native Life in Travancore, p.370.

<sup>40</sup> Rajagopalachari, Note, p.57.



until the early nineteenth century.<sup>41</sup> It was not until 1811-12 that Colonel John Munro, then the Resident and Dewan, assumed the landed property of 378 temples and also took over 1,171 minor temples which had no property. Since that time, 'the expenditure, establishment and the routine of ceremonies, and rules for management' had been settled by the Travancore government. In 1899, according to Nagam Aiya, 1,549 out of the 9,307 temples which existed in Travancore were under state management, and the expenses of the temples were paid from the General Treasury of the government.<sup>42</sup>

As Shungoony Menon explained in 1878, Colonel Munro's aim was to diminish the influence of the temples, which were sometimes hostile to the new regime, by putting them under government control, in order to prevent future commotions. He also certainly intended to secure some permanent revenue from the landed property of the devaswoms. Indeed, the state gained some addition to its revenue from the landed property of the devaswoms.<sup>43</sup> However, whatever the initial intention might be, the management of the devaswoms became one of the most important functions of the Hindu state. In 1940, Velu Pillai wrote that 'Any measure ... tending to diminish the importance of these institutions or to curtail the expenditure ... would

---

<sup>41</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.3, p.521.

<sup>42</sup> Ibid, vol.3, p.521, vol.2, pp.72-73.

<sup>43</sup> Shungoony Menon, A History of Travancore, p.272-3; Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.3, p.464.

be regarded as tending to uproot that Hindu character'.<sup>44</sup> Meanwhile, the management of the devaswoms became a very effective device for excluding avarna castes and Syrian Christians from the Revenue Department and the office of the Tahsildar (local officer). Both offices dealt with the devaswoms, and only savarna castes were supposed to be eligible for these offices.<sup>45</sup> It was only in 1922 that the Devaswom Department was separated from the Revenue Department after long and repeated protests from the Syrian Christians and the avarna castes.<sup>46</sup> Thus, Travancore had many features which identified it as a Hindu state, and it retained these features largely until 1949, when on its incorporation into the Indian Union the Travancore state ceased to exist.<sup>47</sup>

What was the attitude of the British towards these rituals and the resulting expenditure in Travancore? It is true that the British occasionally advised the Travancore government to reduce these ceremonial costs. In 1871, for example, the

---

<sup>44</sup> SMPAP, 3rd Meeting, 1907, p.118; Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.1, p.562.

<sup>45</sup> For example, SMPAP, 3rd Meeting, 1907, p.118.

<sup>46</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.1, pp.572-3.

<sup>47</sup> Susan Bayly wrote that 'many of the main eighteenth-century state rituals were abandoned' as a result of the campaigns mainly by the Madras government during the 1850s. Susan Bayly, Saints, Goddesses and Kings, p.291. But, as we have seen, many important state rituals survived into the nineteenth century and beyond. Maharaja Sri Mulam performed the Hiranyagarbham in 1894 and the Travancore government was criticized for its enormous expenditure on the Murajapam even in 1935. In addition, the dedication of the state to Sri Padmanabha also continued to be a part of the constitution of this state, as was known to 'every child' in Travancore.

Madras government stated that the cost of the devaswoms and uttupuras was 'an unnecessarily heavy charge on the State', and ordered the Resident to advise the Travancore government to conduct 'a careful scrutiny of this expenditure with a view to its reduction'. They also advised the Maharaja to reduce 'Palace expenses' so as to increase the expenditure for more 'useful' purposes such as public works and education.<sup>48</sup> However, what seems more important is not the fact that the Madras government urged the reduction of this expenditure but that, despite their advice, a very large sum of revenue continued to be spent on state rituals and on the institutions like the uttupuras. That was certainly because the British as well as Travancore State considered that these expenditures were essential to preserve the Hindu-state ideology and that they helped effectively to maintain the authority and legitimacy of the Maharaja's rule.

There is no doubt that the British fully recognized the importance of using rituals and symbols for ruling India. Particularly from the second half of the nineteenth century onwards, they ranked the princes or rulers of the native states and the Indians who were under direct British rule by creating a system of royal titles and privileges. The princes were, for example, ranked by several criteria including the size of the state and the amount of their revenue, and a code of conduct was established, which restricted the cloth they

---

<sup>48</sup> G.O. No.63, 26 Feb. 1872, MPP, OIOC; Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.1, p.575.

wore, the weapons they could carry, the number of gun salutes they were entitled to, and so on.<sup>49</sup> In addition, the British performed splendid state rituals in India. The Imperial Assemblage of 1877 and the Imperial Durbar of 1903, which were held to proclaim Queen Victoria Empress and Edward VII Emperor of India. Lord Lytton (Viceroy, 1876-1880), who planned and carried out the Assemblage, stated that 'the further East you go, the greater becomes the importance of a bit of bunting'.<sup>50</sup> However, as David Cannadine has pointed out, the British as well as other nations in Europe also tried to use rituals in their own country. Particularly from the 1870s, old ceremonials were revived and new rituals were 'invented'.<sup>51</sup> In any case, there is no doubt that the British well recognized the importance of using rituals in politics and, therefore, largely allowed state rituals in the princely states to continue, even though they sometimes demanded the reduction of the expenditure.

### The Change in the Nature of the Hindu State

However, the situation surrounding this ideology of a Hindu

---

<sup>49</sup> Bernard S. Cohn, 'Representing Authority in Victorian India', in Eric Hobsbawm and Terence Ranger (eds), The Invention of Tradition, pp.180-81.

<sup>50</sup> Ibid., pp.185, 208.

<sup>51</sup> David Cannadine, 'The Context, Performance and Meaning of Ritual: The British Monarchy and the "Invention of Tradition", c.1820-1977', in Hobsbawm and Ranger (eds), The Invention of Tradition, p.108.

state greatly changed particularly from the late nineteenth century onwards. The political awakening of various castes was one of the principal factors which weakened the legitimating power of this Hindu-state ideology. In particular, the awakening of Syrian Christians seems to have been very important. Syrians increasingly expressed their complaints against the state and began to regard themselves as a completely different religious community.

Travancore was a state which had a large number of non-Hindus, particularly Syrian Christians. In 1875, Christians formed about 20 percent of the total population, and Muslims 6 percent.<sup>52</sup> These different religions seem to have co-existed, and largely been integrated into the Hindu state in 'pre-modern' Travancore. One of the principal reasons for this co-existence was a semi-official state policy of religious tolerance. Regarding this, Lieutenants Ward and Conner, who surveyed Travancore and Cochin from 1816 to 1820, stated that 'Christianity is fully acknowledged by the chief authorities in those countries, and whether from their justice or indifference does not appear to have been exposed to persecution'.<sup>53</sup> Dewan V.P. Madhava Rao stated at the first meeting of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly in 1904 that 'equality of treatment to all religions' was one of the

---

<sup>52</sup> Report on the Census of Travancore taken by command of His Highness the Maha Rajah on the 18th May 1875 (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1876), p.156.

<sup>53</sup> Ward and Conner, Memoir of the Survey of the Travancore and Cochin States (Trivandrum: Sircar Press, 1863), p.129.

principal features of Travancore State.<sup>54</sup> Missionaries more or less recognized this aspect. J. Knowles, an LMS missionary, stated in 1898 that 'the Travancore State has been conspicuous by its toleration of non-Hindu religions'.<sup>55</sup> Thus, there can be no doubt that religious tolerance was at least an official policy of this Hindu state. And this policy undoubtedly played an important role to secure and maintain the legitimacy of the Maharaja's rule over the non-Hindus of Travancore.

Moreover, Christianity seems not to have been considered a completely different religion from Hinduism by Travancore's Christians as well as by Hindus. As Leslie Brown has pointed out, Syrian Christians joined in many festivals, such as Onam and Vishu; engaged in temple celebrations; and gave offerings to the temples with Hindus.<sup>56</sup> The Syrians should have paid certain regards to Hindu deities, and the fiction that the Maharaja was the servant of Sri Padmanabha must have had an effect on the Christians as well. However, the emerging identities of the Syrian Christians and of Hindus themselves gradually made clear the differences between these religions, and, with the growth of communal feelings, Syrians came to refuse to perform rituals with Hindus.<sup>57</sup> Syrians, as will be

---

<sup>54</sup> SMPAP, 1st Meeting, 1904, p.3.

<sup>55</sup> Knowles to Thompson, 11 July 1898, T1, Box 18, Folder 6, CWMA.

<sup>56</sup> Leslie Brown, The Indian Christians of St Thomas (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1982, first published 1956), p.171. Onam is a festival of new moon in September, and Vishu is that of vernal equinox.

<sup>57</sup> Ibid.



seen in Chapter 5, began to complain about unfair treatment by the state, and the state also adopted various policies to prevent the influence of Christians from expanding, even though the state at the same time expressed a policy of religious tolerance. As a result, it became increasingly difficult to integrate non-Hindus in the Hindu state by using Hindu-state ideology alone. Under these circumstance, what the state did was to adopt a kind of democratic measure in order to respond to demands from the non-Hindus. In addition to Syrians, the political awakening of the various Hindu castes was also a very serious problem for the state. It became increasingly necessary for the state to respond properly to the demands of these castes and communities. The creation and development of the Legislative Council and the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly, as will be seen later, were important examples of the state's response to these new communal circumstances.

However, this does not mean that the state's Hindu ideology was totally extinguished. On the contrary, it still had a powerful influence. As we have seen, 'every child' in Travancore knew that the Maharaja was the servant of the Sri Padmanabha, even in the 1920s and 1930s. The Agent to the Governor-General, in charge of Travancore, Cochin and other south Indian states, stated in 1933 that 'The loyal tradition in Indian States is wonderfully strong'.<sup>58</sup> Not surprisingly, the state continued to perform rituals such as the Murajapam

---

<sup>58</sup> Field to Glancy, 1 Feb. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

and to manage the uttupuras. According to the AGG, a Murajapam was held as late as 1935 at a cost of about Rs.500,000.<sup>59</sup> Needless to say, maintaining the Hindu-state ideology was one of the principal concerns of the Maharaja. In 1949, when Travancore was about to be merged into a new state of Travancore-Cochin, the Maharaja stated that he 'governed the State on behalf and as a servant of Sri Padmanabha and that he attached great importance to this position being maintained'.<sup>60</sup> There is no doubt that the Maharaja fully recognized that this ideology was a means by which he could secure as good a future position as possible for himself even if he was bound to lose most of his overtly political power.

#### Language and the State: Tamil and Malayalam

In addition to the growth of communal identities regarding religion and caste, the problem of linguistic identities also became a factor which weakened the integrity of Travancore State. In Travancore, about 84 percent of the population spoke Malayalam and 15 percent Tamil in 1931. The Tamil population was largely concentrated in the four southernmost taluks of Thovala, Agasthiswaram, Kalkulam and Vilavancode, which now comprise Kanyakumari District of Tamilnadu State. In these

---

<sup>59</sup> FR, 15 Dec. 1935, Travancore Affairs, L/P&S/13/1283, OIOC.

<sup>60</sup> V.P. Menon, Integration of the Indian States (1956, reprinted London: Sangam Books, 1985), p.278.



places, more than 87 percent of the population spoke Tamil.<sup>61</sup> Although the Census Report of 1931 declared that 'Malayalam and Tamil are the vernaculars of the State',<sup>62</sup> the Tamil language was almost completely neglected by the Travancore government at least until the late nineteenth century. Malayalam was taught at most government schools and was used in law courts and government offices even at the places where almost all the population spoke Tamil.<sup>63</sup>

One of the earliest protests against this situation was an article in a Tamil newspaper. A Trichinopoly-based Tirisirapura Tamil Selvan demanded in 1893 that the Government Gazette, which was published at that time in English and Malayalam, should be published in Tamil as well.<sup>64</sup> However, the demand was ignored and the situation seems not to have changed greatly after that. Also in 1900, a similar article was published in a Nagercoil-based newspaper. It demanded that a Tamil translator should be appointed by the government and that 'Tamil matters of public interest' in the Gazette should be translated into Tamil.<sup>65</sup> After the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly was formed in 1904, the demands of the Tamil population were frequently expressed

---

<sup>61</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932), p.321.

<sup>62</sup> Ibid., p.323.

<sup>63</sup> Addresses to Dewan Bahadur M. Krishnan Nair, Dewan of Travancore (Trivandrum, 1920), p.9.

<sup>64</sup> Tirisirapura Tamil Selvan, 29 July 1893, NNR.

<sup>65</sup> Nanchi Nesan, 29 Dec. 1900, NNR.

there. In 1910, a Catholic member of the Assembly complained that Malayalam was 'being taught as the chief language in all the schools' and that the official language in the courts and cutcherries (government offices) was Malayalam. He then complained of the situation, stating that it was 'as if the interests to be consulted were those of officials and officials alone'.<sup>66</sup>

Responding to these demands, the Travancore government began to convert Malayalam schools into Tamil schools in the Tamil-speaking areas, under the dewanship of Sir P. Rajagopalachari (Dewan, 1907-1914), who was also well-known for his policy towards the lower castes. Thus, in 1914, there were 14 Malayalam schools and 12 Tamil schools in the two taluks of Thovala and Agustiswaram.<sup>67</sup> This policy was continued by Sir M. Krishnan Nair (Dewan, 1914-1920). In 1918, the 'Taluk Educational Committee' of Shencottah, another Tamil-speaking area situated in central Travancore, expressed its appreciation of the efforts of the Dewan for his 'vigorous steps ... to restore "Tamil" to its proper place'.<sup>68</sup>

However, not surprisingly, this conversion of schools from Malayalam to Tamil encountered opposition from the Malayalam-speaking minorities in the Tamil-majority areas. In the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly of 1924, a Nayar member complained that

---

<sup>66</sup> SMPAP, 6th Session, 1910, p.42.

<sup>67</sup> SMPAP, 10th Session, 1914, p.98.

<sup>68</sup> Addresses to Dewan Bahadur M. Krishnan Nair, Dewan of Travancore (Trivandrum, 1920), p.327.

the conversion of Malayalam schools placed their boys at a great disadvantage, and he demanded that the government 'should not persist in such a policy'.<sup>69</sup> As a compromise, the Travancore government published a guideline that 'if the majority of students in any schools are Tamils in proportion of 2 to 1, such an institution may be converted into a Tamil school'.<sup>70</sup> Thus, although their demands were partly accepted, the Tamil-speaking population was still at a great disadvantage in educational terms. Partly because of this, the number of literates in Tamil was considerably fewer than those in Malayalam. In 1931, there were 185 Tamil speakers for every 1,000 Malayalam speakers, while there were only 87 Tamil literates to every 1,000 Malayalam literates.<sup>71</sup> One of the reasons was, as the Census Report admitted, that 'there are Tamilians who can read and write Malayalam but not their own language'.<sup>72</sup>

Under these circumstances, separatist movements inevitably arose. An organization called the Travancore Tamil Nad Congress was created, and the Tamils began to spoke of 'the tyranny of the brute minority' and conducted 'the "Down with Malayalis" movement'.<sup>73</sup> This movement finally resulted in the

---

<sup>69</sup> SMPAP, 20th Session, 1924, pp.179-80.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid.

<sup>71</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, p.323.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., p.323.

<sup>73</sup> V.P. Menon, Integration of the Indian States (1956, reprinted London: Sangam Books, 1985), p.277; E.M.S. Namboodiripad, The National Question in Kerala (Bombay:

separation of the four southern taluks and a part of Shencottah from the former Travancore State under the States Reorganization Act of 1956.<sup>74</sup> Thus, the movements of the Tamils in Travancore was undoubtedly one of the factors which caused the eventual disintegration of Travancore State.

Meanwhile, there can be no doubt that the movements of the Tamils in Travancore were greatly stimulated by other communal movements, which also demanded fairer treatment from the state. But perhaps the more important factor was the growth of Tamil identity in the Madras Presidency. The linguistic discovery of the Rev. Robert Caldwell (1819-1891) was one of the factors which stimulated the growth of Tamil identity. He informed Tamils that Sanskrit had originally been brought to south India by 'Aryan Brahman colonists' and also that Tamil literature possessed great sophistication.<sup>75</sup> As a result of this and other stimuli, around the 1900s, a number of Tamil associations were established with a view to encouraging the study of Tamil literature and language.<sup>76</sup> Also, the Justice Party, which was formed in 1916 to promote the non-Brahmin movement, encouraged Tamil studies.<sup>77</sup> These factors were

---

People's Publishing House, 1952), p.165.

<sup>74</sup> Sreedhara Menon, A Survey of Kerala History, p.311.

<sup>75</sup> Eugene F. Irschick, Politics and Social Conflict in South India: The Non-Brahman Movement and Tamil Separatism, 1916-1929 (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1969), p.282.

<sup>76</sup> New India, 18 Aug. 1916, quoted in Ibid., p.282.

<sup>77</sup> Ibid., p.290.

undoubtedly responsible for the growth of Tamil identity, and this newly-emerged ideology in turn influenced the attitudes of the Tamils in Travancore and encouraged them to demand fairer treatment from the Travancore government.

As for the Malayalis themselves, however, it is doubtful that there was as strong a manifestation of Malayali identity as that of the Tamils. Perhaps one of the reasons for this was that, in Tamil areas, Tamil nationalism emerged largely from the confrontation between Brahmins and non-Brahmins, in other words, between 'Aryans' and 'Dravidians'. Consequently, it was advantageous for the Tamil non-Brahmins to create Tamil identity among non-Brahmins in order to achieve their political ends. However, in Malayalam-speaking areas, the political struggle took place mainly between caste Hindus and non-caste Hindus or with Syrian Christians. Thus, almost all of the participants were 'Dravidians'. Izhavas and Syrian Christians do not appear to have seen any political value in asserting their Malayali-ness. However, the powerful movement in the Tamil-speaking areas and that in the Telugu-speaking areas, which emerged as the Andhra movement,<sup>78</sup> could have had some influence upon the Malayalis. Malayalis in Kerala also seem to have begun to take interest in their own language and culture largely from the late nineteenth century onwards. Poets and novelists began to produce a great deal of Malayalam

---

<sup>78</sup> For the Andhra movement, see John G. Leonard, 'Politics and Social Change in South India: A Study of the Andhra Movement', in Journal of Commonwealth Political Studies, 5,1, 1967, pp.60-77.

literature. V.C. Balakrishna Panikkar (1889-1915), for example, composed poems which 'marked the first important stage in the evolution of modern Malayalam poetry', and O. Chandu Menon wrote a famous novel Indulekha in 1889.<sup>79</sup> However, the Malayalis' interests in their own language and culture were perhaps most clearly expressed in the Aikya [United] Kerala Movement, which attempted to integrate the three different administrative regions of Travancore, Cochin and British Malabar. One of the earliest resolutions on this subject was passed at a political conference under the presidency of Jawaharlal Nehru in May 1928.<sup>80</sup> The communists also played an important role in putting forward the slogan Aikya Kerala in the 1940s.<sup>81</sup>

The attitude of the Maharaja of Cochin towards these movements was very different from that of the Maharaja of Travancore. The Maharaja of Cochin, who undoubtedly wanted to gain a leading position in the newly-formed state, sympathized with the Kerala movement. In 1946, he expressed his desire to work towards merging Cochin in a united state.<sup>82</sup> Conversely, the Maharaja of Travancore, along with his Dewan, strongly opposed this movement.<sup>83</sup> Dewan Sir C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar, as

---

<sup>79</sup> Sreedhara Menon, A Survey of Kerala History, pp.340-46.

<sup>80</sup> Ibid., p.309.

<sup>81</sup> A.K. Gopalan, Kerala: Past and Present (London: Lawrence & Wishart, 1959), p.75.

<sup>82</sup> Namboodiripad, The National Question, p.164.

<sup>83</sup> Ibid., p.166.

is well-known, planned instead to proclaim the independence of Travancore.<sup>84</sup> However, these two states were finally merged into a state of Travancore-Cochin on 1 July 1949, and Kerala State was finally formed on 1 November 1956. At the same time, the Tamil-speaking areas in Travancore joined Tamilnadu State. Thus, the growth of linguistic identity and the cultural awakening of the Tamils and Malayalis resulted in the formation of linguistic states in independent India and in the disappearance of the princely states of Travancore and Cochin.

#### Travancore as a Model State

As we have seen, Travancore was a state which had a number of conspicuously Hindu elements, and to continue to be a Hindu state was undoubtedly one of the most important objectives of Travancore State. But Travancore was also well-known for an 'enlightened' policy through which it pursued the objective of modernization. This policy owed much to the Maharajas themselves.

The Maharaja, as a ruler of the Hindu state, had to observe a number of prayers and Hindu rituals apart from the rituals previously mentioned. 'Whatever the season', according to J. D. Reeds, the British Resident in 1895-1898, Maharaja Sri Mulam 'plunged into cold water' at half-past seven in the morning. Then he recited his prayers and went to the family

---

<sup>84</sup> Gopalan, Kerala, p.58.

pagoda.<sup>85</sup> Animal food was not used in the diet of his family. Pure water was brought every morning from a certain river, and no food was eaten with Europeans.<sup>86</sup>

But, at the same time, the Maharaja and other members of the ruling family were accustomed to Western ideas and ways of life. They were usually educated in English and the vernacular languages by their tutors, Europeans and Indians who were imparted Western higher education.<sup>87</sup> These tutors were basically selected by the Maharaja and approved by the Madras government in the same way as other major government appointments.<sup>88</sup> As a result, most of them, including female members of the ruling family, spoke English, and English books and illustrated papers were procured and read in their homes. Samuel Mateer wrote in 1882 regarding the royal family that 'Pleasant intercourse is maintained with Europeans of position by attending their garden parties, or meeting them at the military band in the public gardens'.<sup>89</sup> Thus, it was in a sense natural that the Maharaja Ayilliam Thirunal Rama Varma expressed his view through the Dewan in 1865 at the ceremony

---

<sup>85</sup> J.D. Reeds, 'The Daily Life of an Indian Prince', MacMillan's Magazine, No.9, July 1906, p.715.

<sup>86</sup> Mateer, Native Life in Travancore, p.126.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid., p.116.

<sup>88</sup> In 1877, for example, the education of the younger princes, aged 12 and 9 years was entrusted to N. Runga Row, First Assistant in the College. From H.E. Sullivan, Ag. Resident, in G.O. 29 Aug. 1877; Also, in 1880, as Guardian and Tutor to the young princes, H.S. Ferguson was employed. G.O. No.291, 2 July 1880, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>89</sup> Mateer, Native Life in Travancore, p.128



of laying the foundation stone for the new government offices. Dewan Madava Row read in the Maharaja's address that:

It is knowledge that now chiefly constitutes the difference between one nation and another... What is required then is that education should permeate all the parts of this community... In pursuit of such inquiries, they (the higher classes) must cast off all prejudices, and follow reason to those great practical principles which are the boast of the more advanced of the European nations.<sup>90</sup>

In fact, during this Maharaja's reign from 1860 to 1880, numerous reforms were introduced, largely with the help of a famous Dewan, Sir T. Madava Row.

However, before Madava Row took the office of Dewan in 1858 and before this Maharaja assumed the throne in 1860, Travancore was notorious for its mis-rule, and there was even a threat of annexation by the British. As is well-known, by the 1850s, the East India Company had annexed extensive territories from many princes, using misgovernment and the 'doctrine of lapse' as its main justifications. Coorg, Sind, Satara, Nagpur, Jhansi, Sambalpur, Bhagat, Awadh, and other states were annexed mainly by Lord Dalhousie, well-known for

---

<sup>90</sup> Travancore Government Gazette Extraordinary, 9 Dec. 1865, in G.O. No.38, 20 Feb. 1866, MPP, OIOC.

his annexation policy.<sup>91</sup> Although the annexation of Travancore did not actually happen, at least partly due to the outbreak of the Mutiny and Rebellion in 1857, the appointment of a commission of enquiry into the affairs of Travancore was insisted on at that time. Thus, the threat of annexation of Travancore was certainly very real at that time.<sup>92</sup>

In the 1850s, the missionaries of the London Missionary Society also condemned the misgovernment of Travancore. They sent a number of petitions to the Madras government asking for its intervention to improve the situation, in which 'oppressive and extortions of the grossest kind' had in 'late years so much multiplied'. In 1855, for example, the missionaries presented such matters as: (1) the assault, false imprisonment and torture which were committed by the police; (2) corruption among the Sirkar (state) officials; (3) corrupt state of the higher courts; (4) evils arising from the monopoly of pepper, salt and cardamon; and even (5) decreasing revenue of the state. The missionaries also mentioned that the Dewan and Resident, who were very hostile to the missionaries, were unsuitable for their offices and petitioned for their resignation. Rev. John Cox, for example, wrote in 1857 that 'the only way of avoiding annexation is to remove the present

---

<sup>91</sup> Michael Fisher, Indirect Rule in India: Residents and the Residency System, 1764-1857 (New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1991), pp.261-2; Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.64-66; V.P. Menon, Integration of the Indian States, (London: Sangam Books, 1985), p.8. From 1841 to 1856, 220,000 out of 808,000 square miles of the native rulers were annexed. Fisher, op.cit., p.263.

<sup>92</sup> Ibid.

Resident and Dewan'.<sup>93</sup>

Under these circumstances, the appointment of Sir T. Madava Row as Dewan was an important turning point. He assumed the office in 1858 after the death of V. Krishna Row, the previous Dewan. He was educated at the High School established in Madras by the Governor of Madras. The Head Master there was E. B. Powell, a Cambridge graduate. He imparted a liberal English education to the students including three future Dewans of Travancore, namely Sir T. Madava Row (Dewan, 1858-72), Sir A. Seshiah Sastri (1872-77), and V. Ramiengar (1880-87). Madava Row began his career in Travancore as a tutor of the princes, one of whom became Maharaja later on. After working as Dewan Peishcar in charge of the Southern Division, he was appointed Dewan of Travancore.<sup>94</sup>

As a Dewan, he introduced a number of reforms into almost all the areas of the administration. During his Dewanship, a great number of educational and medical institutions were created; the Public Works Department was organized and numerous roads and public buildings, including the new Public Offices, were constructed; judicial reforms were introduced and 'eminent persons' were brought in as judges from outside the state; the Anchal (post) Department was organized; 'oppressive' state monopolies such as that of pepper were

---

<sup>93</sup> John Cox, Travancore: Its Present Ruin, pp.xxxiii, B2, 4, 16, 20.

<sup>94</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.65-6; Nagam Aiya, Travancore State Manual, vol.1, pp.559-62; C. K. Menon, A Critical Essay on Sir Seshia Sastri (Madras: Minerva Press, 1903), p.4.

abolished; and full ownership of 'sirkar pattam land' was granted to the holders.<sup>95</sup>

The Madras government greatly appreciated his efforts from the earliest stages of his administration. They wrote on 23 March 1859 that 'complaints to Government of oppression and misrule in Travancore have greatly decreased since his assumption of Office'.<sup>96</sup> In 1866, he was invested with the Knighthood of the Order of the Star of India together with the Maharaja who was appointed to be a Knight of that Most Excellent Order.<sup>97</sup> Also in 1866, the British government decided that the Raja of Travancore should be called 'Maharaja' in future.<sup>98</sup> Although Madava Row had to resign after a confrontation with the Maharaja, the 'enlightened' policy of the government continued. Consequently, Travancore began to gain a reputation as a 'model' state. This reputation was certainly established at the latest by 1873, when the Acting Governor of Madras described Travancore as 'a Model Native State'.<sup>99</sup>

As to the attitude of the missionaries, they largely welcomed Madava Row's new administration. As we have seen,

---

<sup>95</sup> Kondoor Krishna Pillai, Travancore and its Ruler, (Changanacherry: Sudharma Publishing House, 1941), pp.22-23; Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.75-103.

<sup>96</sup> Ch. Sec. Fort St. George, to Sec. to Govt. of India, 23 Mar. 1859, No.183, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>97</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.3, p.565; Napier to Maharaja, 22 Apr. 1866, in G.O. No.102, 26 Apr. 1866, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>98</sup> Viceroy to Maharaja, 6 Aug. 1866, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>99</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.1, p.560.

removing Resident W. Cullen and Dewan Krishna Row and introducing a number of reforms was what the missionaries wanted in the 1850s. Samuel Mateer, referring to Madava Row, stated in 1871 that 'It seems providential that his eminent talents, firmness, and political sagacity have for so long a time been devoted to the interest of Travancore.'<sup>100</sup>

But why was Madava Row so keen on introducing the reforms? As Robin Jeffrey has pointed out, one of his basic objects was to achieve his own fame, and apparently he knew very well what he needed to do for this purpose. In fact, he was one of the most successful administrators in nineteenth-century India. He was well-known as an enlightened and able administrator and worked as Dewan of Indore as well as Regent of Baroda after his retirement from the Travancore service. But his personal fame does not seem to have been his only concern. Apparently, he had a kind of nationalistic sentiment and showed much interest in enlarging the autonomous area for Indian administrators. Since annexation would deprive Indians of a number of the opportunities in which they could govern the states with a fair degree of independence, the annexation of the princely states was one of the most serious threats to him as well as to the rulers themselves. The office of Dewan was the highest post which Indian administrators could obtain. Undoubtedly, it was partly from this concern that he introduced a number of substantial reforms in Travancore. And this view was certainly shared by some other Indians. A native

---

<sup>100</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.71.

newspaper stated in 1896 that 'As the British Government has kept out the Indians from all the responsible administration, it is only in the service of Native States that they can hope to display their talents and ability'.<sup>101</sup> Also, between 1851 and 1884, highly educated Indians formed three organizations in India, namely the Madras Native Association, the Bombay Association and the Indian Association. Part of the purpose of these organizations was to press the British to Indianize the services of the state.<sup>102</sup>

Madava Row also displayed this rather nationalistic attitude in the case of Pudukkottai, a small princely state in south India. In the 1870s, Pudukkottai came under a grave crisis. Due to misrule, the Raja was deprived of the salute of eleven guns and of the title of His Highness.<sup>103</sup> When the appointment of the next Dewan was considered, Madava Row suggested the name of Seshiah Sastri, who had also been a student of Powell's High School as well as the Dewan of

---

<sup>101</sup> Kerala Patrika, 8 Feb. 1896, NNR.

<sup>102</sup> A.R. Desai, Social Background of Indian Nationalism (Bombay: Oxford University Press, 1948), p.180.

<sup>103</sup> Nicholas B. Dirks, The Hollow Crown: Ethnohistory of an Indian Kingdom (1987, 2nd edition, Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1993), pp.388-9; C. K. Menon, A Critical Essay, p.31-3; The British government divided native states into three classes, namely 'the Salute States', 'Non-Salute States' and the hereditary landowners such as Talukdars, Thanedars, Thakurs and Jagirdars. There were 118 Salute States and each state was allowed a certain number of gun salutes. Baroda, Gwalior, Hyderabad and Berar, Jammu and Kashmir, and Mysore were accorded with the largest 21 guns. Travancore was given a 19 gun salute: Charles Allen and Sharada Dwivedi, Lives of the Indian Princes, (London: Century Publishing, 1984), p.17.

Travancore. Moreover, he strongly urged Sastri to accept the place. Madava Row wrote to Seshiah Sastri that:

You should by no means refuse to that state the benefit of your knowledge and experience. As natives we cannot but be the well-wishers of native states. Therefore let us do our utmost to set Pudukota on a sound footing. ... Many native states have gone. Tanjore is no more. In the Madras Presidency there remain only Travancore, Cochin, and Pudukota to speak of. The two former are pretty safe. I am sincerely and earnestly anxious for the third state... In this circumstance, I must again press you to vouchsafe to Pudukota what it so much requires - the service of a first-rate man.<sup>104</sup>

As Madava Row advised, Seshiah Sastri assumed the office of Dewan of Pudukkottai in 1878 and administered this state for sixteen years.<sup>105</sup> The title of His Highness and the eleven-gun salute were eventually restored in 1886.<sup>106</sup>

Madava Row's attitude regarding this matter was quite consistent with what he did with respect to the nationalist movement in India. He participated in the Indian National

---

<sup>104</sup> Quoted in R. V. Kamesvara Aiyar, Sir A. Sashiah Sastri, p.295.

<sup>105</sup> C. K. Menon, A Critical Essay, p.32.

<sup>106</sup> Dirks, The Hollow Crown, p.389.

Congress when it was held in Madras in 1887.<sup>107</sup> His nationalistic idea was also seen in the case regarding jurisdiction of the Travancore state, as will be seen next.

### Jurisdiction over European British Subjects

There was no rigid agreement between the Travancore government and the Madras government regarding jurisdiction over European British subjects until the 1860s. But there is no doubt that the British allowed Travancore a certain amount of jurisdiction in the matter before that time. In 1837, the Government of India wrote to the Madras government that:

Europeans residing in the territory of Native States, not being servants of the British Government, must be in all respects and in all cases, civil and criminal, subject to the law of the country in which they reside.<sup>108</sup>

This right of the Travancore government to try European British subjects remained unchanged until 1868, when John Liddell, the former Acting Commercial Agent of the Travancore government, petitioned the Madras government to release him from the Travancore prison. He had committed theft by taking

---

<sup>107</sup> Ibid., pp.28,32.

<sup>108</sup> Sec. to Govt. of India, Political Dpt., to Sec. to Govt. of Fort St. George, 12 June 1837, in MPP, 24 June 1874, OIOC.



money away from the Treasury of Travancore during his tenure of the office. Accordingly, he had been sentenced to twelve months' simple imprisonment by the Travancore Court.<sup>109</sup>

The Madras government at first accepted the petition and the Resident wrote to T. Madava Row in October 1868 that 'his trial was illegal' and that 'he is entitled to be released'.<sup>110</sup> Madava Row protested against this decision, claiming that jurisdiction was 'an inherent right of sovereignty'. Then, quoting Queen Victoria's Proclamation of 1858 that 'We shall respect the rights, dignity, and honour of Native princes as our own', he stated that the Queen would not sanction the decision which would put an end to 'one of the most important of the rights of Native princes'.<sup>111</sup> In addition, he wrote that:

If it were right and just for the British Government to extinguish the local jurisdiction of Travancore over offences committed therein by their Subjects, would it not be equally right and just for other Powers, such as France and America, to adopt a similar course in respect of their Subjects in Travancore? And is a Frenchman or

---

<sup>109</sup> Madava Row to H. Newill, 13 Oct. 1868, in Criminal Jurisdiction of Travancore Law Courts, p.4; K. K. Kusuman, 'Travancore's Status in Relation to British Paramountcy - A Case Study' Journal of Kerala Studies, vol.I, Nos. 2,3, Jan. 1974, p.303.

<sup>110</sup> H. Newill to Dewan, 12 Oct. 1868, in Criminal Jurisdiction.

<sup>111</sup> Madava Row to Newill, 23 Oct. 1868, in MPP, 24 June 1874, OIOC.

American who plunders the Travancore treasury itself to be allowed to plead exemption from the Travancore Courts, and to claim to be tried by French or American Courts remote and inaccessible as they are?<sup>112</sup>

It is not clear what kind of discussions were carried out in the Madras government. But after receiving this letter from Madava Row, the Madras government, in December 1868, cancelled their previous decision.<sup>113</sup> As a result, Liddell underwent the remainder of his sentence.

However, in February 1874, the Government of India picked up this matter again. They wrote to the Madras government that 'the Viceroy did not recognize the position assumed by Sir Madava Rao' and demanded that the Travancore government should follow the opinion of the Resident when it would deal with the trial of European British subjects.<sup>114</sup> This decision naturally surprised the Travancore government. About two months later, Seshiah Sastri, then the Dewan of Travancore, wrote to the Resident, expressing 'great surprise and deep concern'. After stating again the argument of his predecessor Madava Row, Seshiah Sastri emphasized how the judicial system of Travancore had Western elements. He pointed out that each

---

<sup>112</sup> Ibid.

<sup>113</sup> Newill to Dewan, 19 Dec. 1868, No.1062, in MPP, 24 June 1874, OIOC.

<sup>114</sup> Sec. to Govt. of India, Foreign Dept., Judicial, to Ch. Sec. to Govt. Fort St. George, 29 Aug. 1873, No.195-J, in MPP 3 Feb. 1874, OIOC.

court had a Christian judge; that the Maharaja 'had not been unwilling to throw open these courts to European Barristers'; that out of seven Magistrates, three were Europeans; and finally that it was under consideration to appoint a European Barrister as a Judge of the High Court.<sup>115</sup>

The Madras government compromised with his claim. Under the agreements introduced in 1875, cases against European British subjects were to be tried 'by the officers of the State who are appointed Special Magistrates by the Darbar [Travancore government] and Justices of Peace by Government of India'.<sup>116</sup> Accordingly, two Britons were appointed Special Magistrates in 1875 by the Travancore government: one was located at Alleppy and other at Trivandrum.<sup>117</sup> Also, 'five officers of the State were notified as Justices of the Peace' in the same year.<sup>118</sup>

This measure was taken partly because it was considered to be inconvenient for European British subjects as well as the 'natives' to have tribunals outside the state and also because it was thought to be 'rather anomalous' that the Travancore government could not put on trial its own officials who were

---

<sup>115</sup> G. A. Ballard, to Ag. Ch. Sec., 25 Apr. 1874, No.38, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>116</sup> Ag. Ch. Sec. to Madras Govt, to Sec. to Govt. of India in Foreign Dept., 20 June 1906, File No. Intl-B, July 1906, 328-332, Foreign Dept, Internal Branch, NAI.

<sup>117</sup> Important Papers relating to Criminal Jurisdiction, pp.16,32.

<sup>118</sup> Under Sec. to Govt. of India in Foreign Dept., to Ag. Ch. Sec. to Govt. of Madras, No.1428-I, A., 18 April 1906, Intl-B, July 1906, Foreign Dept, Internal Branch, NAI.

European British subjects. Indeed, the Travancore government employed a number of Europeans at that time.<sup>119</sup> But it was at least one of the official reasons that the British government recognized the improvement of the judicial system of Travancore. G.A. Ballard, the Resident, wrote to Dewan Seshiah Sastri that:

In consideration ... of the enlightened and progressive principles which have been followed by the State in its judicial administration, the Governor of Madras in Council was pleased to recommend ... that the Sirkar [state], and not the British Government, shall appoint Magistrates ...<sup>120</sup>

As we have seen, the Dewan undoubtedly had an idea that the Westernization of the judicial system could help the princely state to secure its jurisdiction regarding offences which were committed within its territory, and this was at least the semi-official view of the British government as well.

As a state, Travancore undoubtedly had a tendency to secure its sovereignty and to enlarge its autonomous area as much as possible. Establishing its jurisdiction as well as diminishing the intervention from the Madras government must have been one of the most crucial matters for Travancore to consider as a

---

<sup>119</sup> Memorandum by G. A. Ballard, 25 April 1874, in MPP, 24 June 1874, OIOC.

<sup>120</sup> Ballard to Seshiah Sastri, 6 Nov. 1874, No.691, in Important Papers relating to Criminal Jurisdiction, p.16.

state. Since Travancore was not an equal power with the paramount power, the Maharajas and Dewans apparently considered that reforming the administration in line with that of British India was one of the most efficient ways to achieve these goals. In addition, in the 1860s and 1870s, the Madras government was very keen to demand that the princely states should introduce a number of reforms.<sup>121</sup> This situation certainly promoted the rapid Westernization of Travancore.

### The Maharajas and the Paramount Power

As has been seen, preserving the Hindu nature of the state and at the same time governing this state in an 'enlightened' way were crucial parts of the policy of Travancore State. These two elements were clearly recognized by the government itself. Dewan V. P. Madhava Rao, who was not related to Sir T. Madava Row, stated in his address to the first meeting of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly in 1904 that 'Travancore is thus an object lesson of what a Hindu State, when brought under the influence of enlightened and progressive ideas from the West, can achieve without losing the distinctive character imprinted upon it.'<sup>122</sup> But who made the policy? Who was the most influential figure in the government? Undoubtedly the Maharaja played one of the most important roles in the government. The Maharaja of Travancore was not a constitutional monarch, as

---

<sup>121</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.71.

<sup>122</sup> SMPAP, 1st Meeting, 1904, p.3.

are many of the monarchs of today. He knew details of the administration and had to be consulted regarding almost all matters. Let us here take the case of Maharaja Sri Mulam to examine the Maharaja's role in the state.

Sri Mulam Thirunal Rama Varma ruled Travancore from 1885 to 1924. His reign of thirty-nine years was the longest since the beginning of the nineteenth century. In addition, his reign was one of the most critical periods in the history of Travancore, in which the society rapidly changed and a number of important events such as social reform movements among various castes occurred. Thus, it seems useful to examine his role and relationship with other officials.

The Maharaja spent about two hours every day with his private secretary to peruse 'all the papers himself' and to pass orders. He usually indicated only 'the tenors of the reply', but in important cases he himself prepared draft replies. An abstract of all letters received and replies despatched was placed before him the next day. Accordingly, as Dewan Krishnaswamy Row stated, the Maharaja had 'intimate knowledge of even the smallest detail of the work of every department of the State'.<sup>123</sup> The British Residents also wrote almost the same thing in the 1900s. G.T. Mackenzie (Resident, 1899-1904) stated that 'The Maharaja ... knows everything that is going on, and reads every single paper that comes into the

---

<sup>123</sup> quoted in Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.I, p.642.

Dewan's office'.<sup>124</sup> In addition, the Maharaja not only knew the details but also was keen to use his influence. J. Andrew (Resident, 1904-1906) wrote to the Madras government in 1906 that 'The Maharaja is ... intimately acquainted with all the details of administration, and extremely reluctant to surrender to his Diwan or others any of the powers he has hitherto reserved to himself, especially those relating to appointments.'<sup>125</sup>

However, needless to say, Travancore was by no means an independent state. It was under the supervision of the Madras government through the British Resident. The relationship between Travancore and the British government was formally established by the treaties of 1795 and of 1805. Article IX of the treaty of 1805 stated that:

His Highness hereby promises to pay at all times the utmost attention to such advice as the English Government shall occasionally judge it necessary to offer him with a view to the recovering of his finances, the better collection of his revenues, the administration of justice, the extension of commerce, the encouragement of trade, agriculture and industry, or any other objects connected with the advancement of His Highness' interests, the happiness of his people, and

---

<sup>124</sup> Ampthill to Curzon, 15 Sep. 1903, Curzon Papers, F111/208, OIOC.

<sup>125</sup> J. Andrew, 'Confidential Note', in Letter No.132, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

the mutual welfare of both the States.<sup>126</sup>

Accordingly, the British Resident paid attention to almost all the affairs of Travancore State. Rev. Samuel Mateer wrote in 1871 that 'All important measures of legislation and finance, the appointment of the higher officials, and even the succession to the musnud, or throne, must be submitted to the British Resident for his opinion and sanction before being carried into operation. Sentences of capital punishment, too, must have the concurrence of the Resident before being executed'.<sup>127</sup> However, as will be seen in the next chapter, the Travancore Government did not always comply with the 'advice' exactly. In addition, the British came to refrain from intervening in religious matters or in other matters which would greatly undermine the existing order particularly from the late nineteenth century onwards.

One of the peaks of British interventionist policy in India came in 1856 when Awadh was annexed. Until this time, the East India Company had openly manipulated the princely states,<sup>128</sup> and Travancore was under threat of annexation, as we have seen. After the Mutiny, however, the policy of annexation was virtually abandoned. The Queen's Proclamation declared that the British would 'respect the rights, dignity and honour of

---

<sup>126</sup> Quoted in Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore, p.234.

<sup>127</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.66.

<sup>128</sup> Fisher, Indirect Rule in India, p.263.



the native princes as our own'.<sup>129</sup> Although interference did not completely cease, it tended to decrease towards the end of the nineteenth century. However, Lord Curzon (Viceroy, 1899-1905) adopted a very different policy. He did not trust the governing ability of the native rulers and positively intervened in the internal affairs of the states. In fact, fifteen native rulers were 'either forced to abdicate or temporarily deprived of their powers' during his viceroyalty.<sup>130</sup> However, as will be seen in Chapter 2, even Curzon was very cautious about intervening in social and religious matters at least in Travancore. Moreover, Curzon's interventionist policy was also largely abandoned by the British government after his retirement. In order to gain the support of the rulers of the princely states and to cope with the growing nationalist movement, Lord Minto (Viceroy, 1905-10) openly adopted a non-interference policy.<sup>131</sup> Accordingly, he made a well-known speech at Udaipur in 1909, in which he declared that:

The Governor-General in Council is opposed to anything like pressure on Durbars with a view to introducing British methods of administration. He prefers that

---

<sup>129</sup> Ashton, The British Attitudes, p.17.

<sup>130</sup> Ibid., pp.24-26.

<sup>131</sup> James Manor, 'The Demise of the Princely Order: Reassessment', in Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), p.307.

reforms should emanate from the Durbar, and grow up in harmony with the traditions of the State. Administrative efficiency is at no time the only or indeed the chief object to be kept in view. This should be specially borne in mind by officers charged temporarily with the administration of a State during a minority, whether they are in sole charge, or associated with a State Council. They occupy a position of peculiar trust, and should never forget that their primary duty is the conservation of the customs of the State.<sup>132</sup>

These changes of British policy seem to have considerably influenced the process of the selection of the Dewan, who was responsible for the whole administration of Travancore.

#### Selection of the Dewan: V. P. Madhava Rao's Case

The Dewan was usually selected by the Maharaja, and then the appointment was approved by the Madras government. The following case of V. P. Madhava Rao seems to indicate how the Dewan was selected and dismissed, or, more generally, how the policy of the Travancore government was formed.

His predecessor, K. Krishnaswamy Row, assumed the office of Dewan in 1898 after working as Chief Justice of Travancore for as long as fourteen years. Krishnaswamy Row was the Dewan for six years, but he was forced to retire in 1904 on the

---

<sup>132</sup> Ibid., p.44.

advice of the Madras government. He certainly managed the state administration considerably well. The British Government conferred on him the honour of C.I.E. in 1901.<sup>133</sup> But it was not the kind of administration that the Madras government needed at the time. It wanted a 'progressive administrator' who could introduce 'some reforms which were urgently needed' in Travancore.<sup>134</sup> Accordingly, the Madras government advised Maharaja Sri Mulam to select a new Dewan. The Maharaja had no choice but to accept the advice of the Madras Government regarding the dismissal of the Dewan. Even though the Maharaja had considerable power over the Travancore administration, he knew his position very well. J. Andrew, the Resident, wrote that 'he is ready to waive his personal views on the advice of [Madras] Government'.<sup>135</sup> Accordingly, the Maharaja selected V. Nagam Aiya.

V. Nagam Aiya was totally a Travancorean. After graduating from the Maharaja's College at Trivandrum, he entered the Travancore service. He was appointed Census Superintendent in 1874, when he was twenty-four years of age. Subsequently, he conducted the Censuses of 1875, 1881 and 1891, along with working as Tahsildar, Dewan Peishcar of Padmanabhapuram

---

<sup>133</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.1, p.643. C.I.E. was the lowest honour of 'The Most Eminent Order of the Indian Empire' created in 1877. It was distributed to 120 companies. Political and Secret Department Honour Record, L/P&S/15, OIOC.

<sup>134</sup> Annexure to G.O. No.433,431, 25 July 1905, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>135</sup> J. Andrew, 'Confidential Note', in Letter No.132, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

Division and other posts.<sup>136</sup> He was certainly among the elites of the Travancore service and 'the only Travancorean the Maharaja considered suitable'.<sup>137</sup>

However, the Madras Government rejected this appointment, stating that Nagam Aiya was 'quite unfit' for the post.<sup>138</sup> In fact, Nagam Aiya did not have a high reputation among the British officials. The Governor of Madras stated that 'V. Nagam Aiyar is a Travancorean, who has never been out of Travancore, and who has a very inflated idea of himself. He would not do as Diwan, as he is too intimately associated with local cliques, besides lacking the requisite ability'.<sup>139</sup> J. Andrew, the Resident, also wrote in 1905 that 'He is a persona grata with His Highness, and is a plausible talker, but shallow and incompetent'.<sup>140</sup> Thus, the newly installed Dewan, V.P. Madhava Rao, removed him from the post of Dewan Peishkar on Settlement on the ground that 'He ... proved so inefficient'. Nagam Aiya was given the work of finishing the State Manual instead.<sup>141</sup>

Meanwhile, after being denied the appointment of Nagam

---

<sup>136</sup> Testimonials of V. Nagam Aiya, (Madras: National Press, 1897), in Grant Duff Collection, OIOC.

<sup>137</sup> J. Andrew, 'Confidential Note', in Letter No.132, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>138</sup> Ibid.

<sup>139</sup> Ampthill to Curzon, 15 Sep. 1903, Curzon Papers F/111/205, OIOC.

<sup>140</sup> Annexure to G.O. No.433,431, 25 July 1905, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>141</sup> Ibid.

Aiya, the Maharaja considered a number of names of non-Travancoreans and selected V. P. Madhava Rao. He was born in 1850 and took a B.A. degree of the Madras University in 1869. He worked for the Mysore government as Inspector General of Police, Revenue Commissioner, Member of the Council of Regency and so on, and then was appointed Dewan of Travancore.<sup>142</sup> During his Dewanship, V. P. Madhava Rao introduced a number of reforms. The abolition of taxation in kind and the creation of Sri Mulam Popular Assembly were examples of his reforms.<sup>143</sup>

The Madras government was certainly satisfied with this Dewan who was 'decidedly progressive'.<sup>144</sup> But the Maharaja was not. In this case, as we have seen, the Maharaja's will was ignored by the Madras government twice. Firstly, he had to dismiss K. Krishnaswamy Rao on the advice of the Madras government, and, secondly, the appointment of V. Nagam Aiya was disapproved. Accordingly, the 'feeling that an outsider was forced on him' rankled thereafter in the Maharaja's mind, and led to an unfriendly attitude towards the Dewan from the very beginning. The Resident continued to write that 'His Highness heartily dislikes his Minister and constantly insults

---

<sup>142</sup> Mr. V.P. Madhava Rao: A Sketch of His Life, pp.2-7.

<sup>143</sup> He was not related to the well-known Dewan Sir T. Madava Row. Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.339.

<sup>144</sup> J. Andrew, 'Confidential Note', in Letter No.132, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

and irritates him in writing and in personal conversation'.<sup>145</sup>

In addition, there was another cause which made their relationship worse. The Maharaja was under the strong influence of the men called 'Palace Favourites'. In particular, 'the Second Favourite' named Sankaram Tampi, whose formal office was the Manager of the Maharaja's Palace, had 'an extraordinary and very fearful influence' over the Maharaja. Under these circumstances, V.P. Madhava Rao refused to support Tampi. This naturally caused the favourite to make 'a great deal of mischief between the Dewan and Maharaja'. In November 1904, a peon instigated by the favourite insulted the Dewan.<sup>146</sup> In spite of being constantly insulted and irritated, however, Dewan V.P. Madhava Rao, according to the Resident, adopted a perfectly respectful attitude towards the Maharaja. But this relationship could not last long, and finally in 1906, only two years after his inauguration, he left the Travancore service.

Thus, the deterioration of the relationship between the Maharaja and the Dewan certainly had a decisive result, that is to say, the resignation of the Dewan. It was also due to a confrontation that Sir T. Madava Row (Dewan, 1858-1872) was dismissed by the Maharaja Ayilliam Thirunal. This Maharaja was also 'an autocrat who would brook no opposition, no

---

<sup>145</sup> Ibid.

<sup>146</sup> Ibid., Annexure to G.O. No.433,431, 25 July 1905, MPP, OIOC.

contradiction, from anybody'. He greatly disliked Sir T. Madava Row (who was once his own tutor), at least when the Dewan was about to retire. The Maharaja once wrote to the next Dewan, Seshiah Sastri, that 'this is a spirit of Madava Row and when I see such a spirit my feelings would be disturbed in the same manner'.<sup>147</sup>

As we have seen above, the Madras government exercised considerable influence regarding the dismissal and appointment of the Dewan of Travancore at least in the early twentieth century. But at the same time, the Maharaja also had great influence, particularly over the dismissal of the Dewan. Accordingly, it was essential for the Dewan to satisfy both the Maharaja and the Resident if he wished to survive as Dewan. The Dewan was thus a mediator between the Maharaja and the Resident. In other words, through the Dewan, the Maharaja and the Resident both influenced the policy-making process.

#### The Selection of Dewan in the 1920s and 1930s

However, such a strong influence from the Madras government as was seen in the case of V. P. Madhava Rao seems gradually to have disappeared after that critical event. The non-interference policy adopted by Lord Minto apparently influenced this situation. In November 1908, one year before Lord Minto's Udaipur speech, the Raja of Cochin claimed

---

<sup>147</sup> C. K. Menon, A Critical Essay, p.23; Kamesvara Aiyar, Sir A. Sashiah Sastri (Madras: Srinivasa, Varadachari and Co., 1902), p.222; Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.I, p.556.

practically non-interference, writing to the Resident that:

So far as I understand the Constitution, it is that the Ruling Chief is at full liberty to deal independently with all matters of internal administration, and that consulting the Resident about such matters is left entirely to his discretion, the Paramount Power exercising only a general supervision over the Darbar's actions and reserving to themselves the power of interference in cases of grave mal-administration.<sup>148</sup>

The Madras government rejected this view and insisted that it could interfere in any matter relating to the internal administration of the state. But, at the same time, they recognized quite well that 'to do so at a late stage or after the measure has become fait accompli' would damage the Maharaja's prestige, which was 'their constant concern'. Accordingly, the Madras government suggested that 'friendly and confidential co-operation' should be maintained 'so as to avoid the official intervention'.<sup>149</sup> Thus, although the Madras government did not abandon their interference policy, they become more sensitive to the will of the native rulers.

As to Travancore, the British government continued to intervene in the selection of the Dewan and other matters in

---

<sup>148</sup> Raja of Cochin to Lionel Davidson, 9 Nov. 1908, CRR, R/2/880/87, OIOC.

<sup>149</sup> Ag. Ch. Sec. to Davidson, 9 March 1909, CRR, R/2/880/87, OIOC.



the 1920s. That was partly because Travancore had a minority administration from 1924 to 1931. In 1925, the Agent to the Governor-General (AGG) wrote that 'As regards the Dewanship of Travancore, I take it that so long as there is a minority administration, the sanction of Government of India will be necessary to each fresh appointment'.<sup>150</sup> Maharani Regent Setu Lakshmi Bayi recognized this situation well, and she frequently consulted C. W. E. Cotton, the AGG, when she selected M. E. Watts, who was born in Travancore but had 'various experience in British Indian service', as the next Dewan.<sup>151</sup>

In the meantime, especially in the twentieth century, it became increasingly critical for the Travancore government to respond effectively to public demands. For this purpose, Maharaja Sri Mulam created the Legislative Council in 1888. This Council was reformed in 1898, 1919, 1921 and 1932. Although its functions were at first 'mainly of an advisory nature', the strength and the rights of the members were enlarged through these reforms. In addition to this Council, the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly was established in 1904 also by Maharaja Sri Mulam. It was not a law-making body, and it was at first only 'an assembly of the representatives of the

---

<sup>150</sup> Political Agent to Officiating Sec. to Govt. of India, 3 Apr. 1925, CRR, R/2/Temp No.884/148, OIOC. From 1923 onwards, Travancore and Cochin were brought into direct political relations with the Government of India, and after that former Resident came to be called the Agent to the Governor-General, or the Political Agent.

<sup>151</sup> Setu Lakshmi Bahi to Cotton, 7 Jan. 1925, CRR, R/2/884/147, OIOC.

landlords and merchants in the country'. But later this assembly also accommodated the representatives of the lower castes such as the Izhavas, Pulayas and Parayas, and it increasingly became a place in which communal interests were expressed.<sup>152</sup> Under these circumstances, the appointment of the Dewan also came to reflect these communal demands.

When the selection of the next Dewan was considered in 1925, the communal feelings of various communities were very strong. There was 'a growing feeling of resentment against the succession of "foreign [i.e., non-Travancorean]" Dewans'. Different communities began to demand the appointment of the Dewan from their own community. The Nayars wanted Krishna Pillai, the Chief Secretary, to be the next Dewan, while Syrian Christians hoped for some Travancoreans in the Mysore service, and Brahmins for another foreign Dewan from Madras.<sup>153</sup> Under these circumstances, the Maharani Regent considered that selecting the Dewan from these particular communities would cause a serious communal confrontation. When she selected M.E. Watts, she wrote to Cotton, the AGG, that 'he will be above communal jealousies and will be in a position to take a detached view of things'.<sup>154</sup>

Since he was the first Christian and non-Hindu Dewan,

---

<sup>152</sup> Ramakrishnan Nair, Constitutional Experiments in Kerala (Trivandrum: Kerala Academy of Political Science, 1964), pp.3-9.

<sup>153</sup> AGG to Patterson, Offg. Sec. to Govt. of India, 7 April 1925, CRR, R/2/884/147, OIOC.

<sup>154</sup> Setu Lakshmi Bayi, to Cotton, 13 Mar. 1925, CRR, R/2/884/147, OIOC.

except Colonel John Munro who had held the office from 1811 to 1814, high-caste Hindus were strongly opposed to this appointment. It was insisted that the Dewan in a Hindu state should be a caste-Hindu since he had to play 'a most prominent part' in several festivals and functions and also had to visit the temples in company with the Maharaja on several occasions.<sup>155</sup> However, this appointment was not changed, and Travancore had three non-Hindus, i.e., T. Austin (1932-34) and Sir Muhammad Habibullah (1934-36) in addition to M.E. Watts, out of five Dewans from 1925 to 1949.

In the 1930s, the interference from the paramount power regarding the appointment of the Dewans almost ended in Travancore. Sri Chitra finished the period of minority in 1931 and became the Maharaja. On 31 August 1936, he wrote to W. A. M. Garstin, the Political Agent, that he had decided to offer the Dewanship to Sir C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar, who was then 'the Legal and Constitutional Advisor' to the Maharaja.<sup>156</sup> Since Ramaswami Aiyar was then 'exceedingly unpopular in South India', Garstin replied to the Maharaja on the same day writing that 'your Highness will await such advice as his Excellency may wish to offer'.<sup>157</sup> The Maharaja then replied to Garstin on the following day that:

---

<sup>155</sup> C. Parameswaran Pillai to Viceroy, date unknown, CRR, R/2/884/147, OIOC.

<sup>156</sup> Maharaja Rama Varma to Col. Garstin, 31 Aug. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/207, OIOC.

<sup>157</sup> D. M. Field to Pol. Sec. to Govt. of India, 2 Jan. 1935, CRR, R/2/888/210, OIOC; W. A. M. Garstin to Rama Varma, 31 Aug. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/207, OIOC.

I ... feel it my duty to tell you at once that you are evidently under a misconception as to the procedure in the matter of choice of Dewan. In 1932, the Government of India decided to discontinue the practice of the Travancore Government having to inform the A.G.G. and to obtain his approval in respect of appointments to offices on a salary of Rs 500 and above, as not being in consonance with their present policy towards full-powered States...<sup>158</sup>

This view was accepted by the Government of India, and the Maharaja appointed C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar as he intended to. Also, in addition to this case, the Maharaja himself revealed that the selection of Sir Muhammad Habibullah was done independently of the Government of India, even though this was clearly a result of the advice of C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar, and that he privately informed the Viceroy of this selection 'solely because of the friendly personal relations' between the Maharaja and the Viceroy.<sup>159</sup> Thus, shortly after the minority period of Maharaja Sri Chitra finished, the British decided not to intervene in the selection of Dewan of Travancore, and this decision was largely observed.

Meanwhile, Robin Jeffrey has classified the period from

---

<sup>158</sup> Rama Varma to Garstin, 1 Sep. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/207, OIOC.

<sup>159</sup> Ibid.

1904 to 1947 as that of the 'imposed Minister'.<sup>160</sup> He has argued that during that period one 'imposed Minister', or 'outsider enjoying the confidence of British governments and dependent on them for his prestige and future prospects', succeeded another in Travancore as 'The ultimate solution to British governments' problem of how to control major events and decisions in Travancore'.<sup>161</sup> However, it is doubtful that all the Dewans were 'imposed' in this period. As we have seen, the selections of Muhammad Habibullah and Ramaswami Aiyar were conducted totally independently. Especially in the case of Ramaswami Aiyar, the Maharaja selected him against the advice of the AGG, as we have seen. It is true, as Robin Jeffrey has pointed out, that Travancore largely had non-Travancorean Dewans from 1904 to 1947.<sup>162</sup> But the Dewans were not selected only as the British desired, and particularly in the 1930s, British intervention virtually ceased in Travancore at least with regard to the selection of Dewans.

---

<sup>160</sup> Robin Jeffrey, 'The Politics of "Indirect Rule": Types of Relationship among Rulers, Ministers and Residents in a "Native State"', Journal of Commonwealth and Comparative Politics, 8,3, 1975, p.273.

<sup>161</sup> Ibid., pp.273-7.

<sup>162</sup> However, not all the Dewans were outsiders, contrary to Jeffrey's argument. V.S. Subramanya Aiyar (Dewan, 1929-1932) was a member of the Travancore service. His 'whole career' was spent in the Travancore service. Just before he was appointed Dewan, he had been a 'Head of Sircar Vakil (attorney)': Maharani to Crosthwaite, 27 Jan. 1929, CRR, R/2/886/180, OIOC; Crosthwaite to Watson, 29 Jan. 1929, CRR, R/2/886/180, OIOC.

## Conclusion

The Travancore government continued to spend enormous sums of revenue on state rituals such as the Murajapam and institutions like the uttupuras even in the twentieth century. Undoubtedly, this expenditure was considered essential to preserve the Hindu-state ideology. This widely accepted ideology was undoubtedly useful to give the Maharaja of Travancore an air of divinity and authority, which greatly contributed to the stability of the Maharaja's rule. The British, who themselves used, for example, splendid ceremonials such as the Imperial Assemblage of 1877, apparently recognized its importance and never demanded the total abolition of the state rituals and 'charitable' institutions.

However, Travancore was also known as a 'model state', ruled by 'enlightened' Maharajas, with able Dewans largely after the 1860s. The princes were given an English education and were familiar with the Western ideas. In addition, they understood their position very well and knew what they should and could do in the political system in which they were placed. That is to say, to reform the state administration in line with British India, or to 'modernize' the state, was one of the most efficient ways to maintain and enlarge their autonomous position. The British apparently refrained from interference and gave more autonomy including jurisdiction to the princely states as long as these states were governed

well. Conversely, the rulers were deprived of a number of privileges when there was a case of grave misrule, as was shown in the case of Pudukkottai, even though the annexation policy was almost entirely abandoned after the Mutiny. Moreover, it became more and more necessary for the government to respond to the public demand which considerably increased after the middle of the nineteenth century, and to adopt, in a limited sense, democratic measures into its political system. That was largely because the Hindu-state ideology became increasingly inadequate to authorize the Maharaja's rule, even though it continued to have a considerable influence. In particular, the growth of communal identities among Syrian Christians and the lower castes was a decisive factor which made the state reform its administration and adopt certain 'democratic' measures.

In the meantime, apart from the influence of the British, the Maharaja and the Dewan played the most important role in the policy-making of the state. The Maharaja was not a constitutional monarch in today's sense and, in fact, had considerable personal power. Also the Dewan was responsible for the whole administration and the reputation of Travancore as a model state was to a large extent due to the able Dewans including Sir T. Madava Row. The Dewan was basically chosen and dismissed by the Maharaja and approved by the British authorities. Since both the Maharaja and the British had enormous influence over the selection and dismissal of the Dewan, he generally attempted to satisfy both sides. This

relationship between the Maharaja, paramount power and Dewan largely continued, though the degree of the intervention from the British changed considerably. Generally speaking, the influence of the paramount power gradually decreased and almost ceased to exist in the 1930s.

Meanwhile, Travancore was also a state in which an enormous number of people, mainly from the lower castes, converted to Christianity through the activities of the Christian missionaries. The missionaries were a threat to the Hindu state largely due to their efforts to convert the Hindu population. But at the same time, they contributed to the 'modernization' or Westernization of Travancore. The crucial and complicated relationship between the missionaries, the Travancore government and the British authorities will be examined in more detail in the following chapters.



## CHAPTER 2

## THE BRITISH AUTHORITIES AND THE MISSIONARIES

Introduction

As R.E. Frykenberg has pointed out, the view that Christian missions were 'the handmaiden of imperialism' was certainly an oversimplification.<sup>1</sup> It is a well-known fact that the East India Company adopted a policy of religious neutrality and generally avoided taking part in (or even appearing to give support to) the activities of the missionaries. Moreover, there were even instances of 'persecution' by Company officials.<sup>2</sup> However, it is equally true that the missionaries in Travancore frequently contacted the British authorities with a view to achieving certain goals through their pressure on the princely state, and these tactics were successful to some extent. Thus, the missionaries certainly enjoyed relatively 'easy access to the highest government offices'.<sup>3</sup> But the attitudes of the British authorities towards the missionaries were not always the same. Particularly in the

---

<sup>1</sup> R.E. Frykenberg, 'Caste, Morality and Western Religion under the Raj', Modern Asian Studies, 19, 2 (1985), p.322.

<sup>2</sup> Dick Kooiman, Conversion and Social Equality in India (New Delhi: Manohar, 1989), pp.26-32.

<sup>3</sup> Ibid., pp.9, 198.

second half of the nineteenth century, the relationship between the missionaries and the Madras government underwent a significant change, and this aspect has not been adequately investigated. Therefore, in this chapter, we will examine how the attitudes of the British authorities towards the missionaries changed in the second half of the nineteenth century.

The missions with which we will mainly deal in this chapter were the London Missionary Society (LMS) and the Church Missionary Society (CMS). Both worked in Travancore for a very long time and had great influence upon the society and government policies. The LMS was established in 1795 by members from various denominations such as the Congregationalists, the Presbyterians and the Methodists. The first LMS missionary in Travancore was W.T. Ringeltaube, a German Lutheran, who commenced his work in 1806. The CMS was formed by the Evangelicals in the Church of England in 1799 and started its work in north Travancore in 1816.<sup>4</sup> Besides these two societies, there were a few Protestant missions, though they were relatively new and small in size. The Salvation Army established its headquarters at Nagercoil in 1890; the Brother Mission started its work in 1898; and the Lutheran Mission in 1907.<sup>5</sup> As to Catholic missions, several dioceses in Travancore conducted missionary activities. The Changanachery Diocese was the oldest, which started its work

---

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., pp.33-5.

<sup>5</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932), p.341.

in 1831. Other diocese was formed in Quilon in 1853 and Verapoly in 1886.<sup>6</sup> Although it is not very clear how these Catholic missions worked in Travancore, their influence over the political authorities was undoubtedly much smaller than that of the LMS and the CMS. As a result, the Travancore state and the Madras government rarely paid attention to them.

### The First Half of the Nineteenth Century

There can be no doubt that religious neutrality was one of the main policies of the East India Company. The Governor of Madras stated in 1859 that 'The British Government has now for some years permitted Missionary enterprise though it has carefully abstained from taking any part in it'.<sup>7</sup> Before 1813, the Company officially prohibited missionary activities in India through its Charter. Missionaries received a permit to reside in India 'only in rare cases' before 1813.<sup>8</sup> However, as Stephen Neill has pointed out, the attitude of the Company towards missionaries was 'curiously inconsistent and self-contradictory'. In Bengal, the Company authorities were generally hostile to the missionaries, while, in south India,

---

<sup>6</sup> Ibid.

<sup>7</sup> Minute of the President, Harris, 28 Feb. 1859, MPP, 15 Mar. 1859, p.284, OIOC.

<sup>8</sup> Julius Richter, A History of Missions in India, translated by Sydney H. Moore (Edinburgh: Oliphant Anderson & Ferrier, 1908), p.145.

they welcomed the work of the German missionaries.<sup>9</sup> Also, in Travancore, the Company's attitude was far from neutral. Both the LMS and the CMS had a great deal of support from the British Residents in the early stages of their history.

Colonel C. Macaulay was the first British Resident, who came to Travancore in 1800. He granted a passport and travelling expenses for W.T. Ringeltaube, the first LMS missionary to work in Travancore. Through his influence, Ringeltaube was introduced to the Dewan so as to apply for the permission to build the first Protestant church in Travancore.<sup>10</sup> Ringeltaube wrote that 'our Society is indebted alone to Col. Macaulay', 'without whose determined and fearless interposition, none of their missionaries would have been able to set a foot in that country'.<sup>11</sup> Undoubtedly, Macaulay had a great deal of 'zeal' to play a role in diffusing Christianity in India. During his retirement in England, Macaulay worked in forming plans for the completion of the Malayalam translation of the Bible, which he began while he was in Travancore.<sup>12</sup>

Macaulay's successor Col. John Munro (Resident, 1810-1819)

---

<sup>9</sup> Stephen Neill, A History of Christianity in India, 1707-1858 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1985), p.149.

<sup>10</sup> C.M. Agur, Church History of Travancore (New Delhi: Asian Educational Services, 1990, first published 1903), p.40; Samuel Mateer, The Land of Charity (London: John Snow & Co., 1871), p.262.

<sup>11</sup> Agur, Church History of Travancore, Introductory Chapter pp.40-41.

<sup>12</sup> Ibid., p.41.

was 'still more zealous'.<sup>13</sup> He helped the missionaries in many respects and greatly contributed to the development of Christianity in Travancore. Firstly, he invited the Church Missionary Society to Travancore and requested them to work among the Syrian Christians. He also persuaded the Rani of Travancore to grant a large amount of land and money to the missionaries. For example, the London Missionary Society was given a bungalow at Nagercoil and Rs. 5,000 for the purchase of rice-fields. By the income from the latter, the Nagercoil Seminary, the LMS's institution for higher education, was partly supported. As to the grant to the CMS, the Rani presented the Kottayam College with Rs. 20,000 which were laid out in lands, besides a previous gift of Rs. 1,000. She also granted a tract of land near Quilon at least seven miles in circumference. Moreover, the Rajah of Cochin, through Munro's persuasion, presented Rs.5,000 to the LMS in Travancore. Charles Mead, an LMS missionary, spent this in purchasing paddy fields and also in building the Nagercoil Church.<sup>14</sup>

Moreover, he appointed Charles Mead as civil judge at Nagercoil: this was 'perhaps ... the only instance in the whole history of British India or of Native States' of a missionary being entrusted with such a office.<sup>15</sup> Regarding the reason of this appointment, Munro stated that 'The

---

<sup>13</sup> Agur, Church History of Travancore, Introductory Chapter, p.42.

<sup>14</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.267; Agur, Church History of Travancore, pp.694-5.

<sup>15</sup> Agur, Church History of Travancore, p.685.

scrupulous integrity and conscientious justice of the Christian Judge would exalt the reverence of the people for the British character and contribute to found its influence still more on the durable basis of their interests and affections'.<sup>16</sup> Also, he persuaded the Rani to issue a proclamation to exempt Christians from uriyam duties connected with Hindu temples and supplying provisions to uttupuras, or feeding houses for Brahmins.<sup>17</sup>

However, the Residents who succeeded Munro seem not to have been as zealous as Macaulay and Munro, and, under these Residents, some policies which were hostile to the missionaries were adopted by the Travancore government. The proclamation of 1829 was one example. It was issued after disturbances relating to the breast-cloth controversy and contained several anti-missionary elements. It declared that Christian converts were 'not permitted to act towards persons of higher castes contrary to the usages of their own castes before they become Christians'. Also, it prohibited the erection of places of worship without the permission of the Sirkar officers. Moreover, it expressly cancelled the former decree which had given freedom to Christians to wear their cloths anyway they liked.<sup>18</sup> Therefore, the missionaries felt this measure to be especially intended to frustrate Christian

---

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p.686.

<sup>17</sup> Ibid., Appendix 1.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid., p.843, Appendix p.lviii.

activities.<sup>19</sup>

Also, in 1837, J.S. Fraser, the Resident, stated that 'Europeans residing in the territory of Native States, not being servants of the British Government, must be held to be in all respects, and in all cases, Civil and Criminal, subject to the Law of the Country in which they reside'.<sup>20</sup> Against this policy, the missionaries sent a memorial to Fraser stating that 'the only acknowledged standard of Criminal Law in Travancore both in the definition of crime, and its punishments is that of the Dharma Shastram, confessedly barbarious and cruel in many of its provisions'.<sup>21</sup> However, the situation did not change, and the missionaries had to submit this matter again in 1859 after the breast-cloth disturbances, as will be seen later.

Under these circumstances, the LMS's plan to reside in Trivandrum also encountered many difficulties. The Travancore government repeatedly refused to grant the permission. It was not until 1838 that John Cox, an LMS missionary, was able to settle in Trivandrum and start a mission in the capital of the Hindu state, and significantly this was done with the help of Fraser, the Resident.<sup>22</sup>

---

<sup>19</sup> Kooiman, Conversion and Social Equality in India, p.145.

<sup>20</sup> Memorandum of J.S. Fraser, 13 July 1837, MPP, p.136, April 1859, OIOC.

<sup>21</sup> Memorial of the English Missionaries in Travancore and Cochin to Governor in Council, 26 Dec. 1837, MPP, p.138, April 1859, OIOC.

<sup>22</sup> Agur, Church History of Travancore, pp.787-8,876.

However, Lieutenant-General W. Cullen (Resident, 1840-1860) was almost totally different from his predecessors and was apparently hostile to Christianity. This 'Hindooized' officer held the view that the missionaries aimed at raising 'an independent unconstitutional authority which might unsettle, if not altogether subvert, the existing political arrangements of the native state'.<sup>23</sup> This Resident, according to Samuel Mateer, an LMS missionary, 'though kind and courteous in manners, generous in his gifts, and scientific in his tastes, was completely under the influence of Brahman favourites, adopted their views, and saw no necessity for missionary labours, or the Christian instruction of the poor'.<sup>24</sup> The Dewan, Krishna Rao, who was a protégé of Cullen, was also hostile to the missionaries, and it was this Dewan who, writing to the Tahsildar at Tiruwalla in February 1851, laid it down as a general rule, that 'Though an Illoowen [Izhava, one of the lower castes] becomes a Christian he must not cease to be an Illoowen'.<sup>25</sup> Thus, under these officials, the Travancore government in the mid-nineteenth century was 'staunchly Hindu and thoroughly conservative'.<sup>26</sup>

However, the attitude of the Madras government itself was

---

<sup>23</sup> John A. Jacob, A History of the London Missionary Society in South Travancore (Nagercoil: Diocesan Press, 1990), p.121; Agur, Church History of Travancore, Introductory Chapter, p.48.

<sup>24</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.297.

<sup>25</sup> Appendix E, MPP April 1859, p.144.

<sup>26</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976), p.37.



not so hostile to the missionaries at that time. In about the 1850s the missionaries agitated eagerly against the social and political problems of Travancore, such as slavery, uriyam (forced labour), caste restrictions (particularly the restriction on the use of breast-cloths) and even the mis-rule of the Travancore government, and the Madras government responded more or less favourably to the missionary appeals. Among these matters, slavery was one of the most important topics in Travancore in the mid-nineteenth century. In Travancore, the lowest castes such as the Pulayas and the Parayas were slaves, who were largely engaged in agricultural labour. Their owners were the higher castes such as the Nayers and the Syrian Christians. Four years after Act V of 1843, which legally emancipated slaves in British India, the missionaries of the LMS and the CMS presented an address to the Maharaja through the Resident, proposing entire and immediate emancipation of all slaves in Travancore. However, not surprisingly, the Dewan replied that emancipation of slaves was 'too important a question to be considered at present'. Thus, the missionaries again petitioned in 1848.<sup>27</sup>

The Madras government also intended to abolish slavery gradually in Travancore and Cochin even though it sometimes criticized the missionaries' rather radical agitations.<sup>28</sup> According to the Madras government, the Resident had urged on the Dewan of Travancore the adoption of measures for the

---

<sup>27</sup> Nagam Aiya, The Travancore State Manual, Vol.I, p.508., Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.44.

<sup>28</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.48.

'gradual emancipation' of all children of the 'Sirkar slaves', the property of the state who were hired out to cultivators. Then, in May 1850, the Court of Directors of the Company expressed its desire that 'the subject of predial slavery in Travancore and Cochin should receive the serious attention of Government with a view to effecting early emancipation with the least possible injury to individual interests'.<sup>29</sup> Accordingly, a proclamation was issued in 1853 to declare that all children of government slaves who might be born subsequently should be free, and finally the total abolition of slavery in Travancore was declared by the Proclamation of 24 June 1855.<sup>30</sup>

Uriyam, forced labour, was also an important practice which the missionaries agitated against in the mid-nineteenth century. Although Christians had been legally exempted from performing uriyam for temples or on Sundays largely by the efforts of Resident John Munro as we have seen, this custom continued in some places. In 1851, Joseph Peet, a CMS missionary, succeeded in getting the exemption proclamation reissued. Some began to avoid uriyam completely and by 1857 uriyam had fallen into disuse in many areas, though the missionaries still demanded the total abolition of uriyam in their petition in 1859.<sup>31</sup>

---

<sup>29</sup> Chief Sec. Fort St. George, to Sec. to the Govt. of India, 9 Mar. 1855, Foreign and Political Proceedings, 5 Apr. 55, NAI.

<sup>30</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, Vol.I, p.509.

<sup>31</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.57.

Thus, the missionaries in the 1850s were very assertive and enthusiastically attacked existing customs in Travancore, and the British, General Cullen apart, took more or less similar attitudes. The Madras government and other British authorities generally did not hesitate to criticize caste or social customs in the mid-nineteenth century. These attitudes seem to be most clearly seen in the case of the Breast-Cloth Disturbance.

### The Breast-Cloth Disturbance

Among numerous caste restrictions, the breast-cloth restriction was certainly the most controversial. In Travancore, the garment called 'the upper cloth' was allowed to be worn only by Nayar and other high-caste women. It was a light cotton cloth which was worn loosely across the breast and over one shoulder.<sup>32</sup> The Shanars and other lower castes such as the Izhavas and Pulayas were forbidden not only to wear the upper cloth but also to cover the upper part of their bodies,<sup>33</sup> and this restriction caused a number of disturbances in the nineteenth century.

In 1829, after some disturbances between Shanars and Nayars, the Rani issued a Proclamation permitting the women of the Shanar converts to wear a jacket called kuppayam like

---

<sup>32</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.61.

<sup>33</sup> Robert L. Hardgrave, Jr., The Nadars of Tamilnad: The Political Culture of a Community in Change (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1969), p.59.

the women of Syrian Christians and Muslims.<sup>34</sup> But the Hindu Shanars and other lower castes were prohibited by the 'standing laws' of Travancore from covering their person in 'any way whatever above the waist'.<sup>35</sup> However, the Shanar women, particularly those who were converts to Christianity, began to wear a style of dress similar to that worn by Sudra and Brahmin females.<sup>36</sup> And this led to a disturbance largely between the Shanars and the Nayers in the late 1850s.

This disturbance started on 8 October 1858 when a Christian woman was assaulted in the public market at Neyyattinkara in south Travancore, and it continued for several months. Nayers attacked Shanar women who appeared in public in high-caste dress, and the Shanars retaliated. During the disturbance, the Christian converts were molested and harassed, and a number of mission schools, chapels and houses of ordinary Christians were burnt.<sup>37</sup> Also, the missionaries were threatened with assassination.<sup>38</sup> James Russell, an LMS missionary described the disturbance as follows:

During the early months of the year ... For two or three months all was in commotion, anxiety and fear. The

---

<sup>34</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.1, p.525.

<sup>35</sup> Memorial of the LMS in Travancore to Trevelyan, 18 July 1859, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>36</sup> Madava Row to Cullen, 12 Feb 1859, No.196, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>37</sup> Evangelical Magazine, June 1859, p.442.

<sup>38</sup> Jacob, A History of the London Missionary Society in South Travancore, pp.128-9., Nagam Aiya, Manual, Vol.I, p.526., G.O. No.75, 27 Jan. 1859, MPP, OIOC.

schools were entirely broken up. Many of the catechists had left their stations. Some took refuge in the neighbouring province of Tinnevely, while some strive to keep themselves from the power of their oppressors by removing from place to place.<sup>39</sup>

The causes of this disturbance were rather complex. However, the missionaries' agitation was undoubtedly one of the direct causes. In the annual report for 1858, one missionary stated that he had not yet succeeded in persuading the Christian women to wear a jacket. That was because, according to him, these women had long neglected to carry out his 'wishes' before 1858. However, during 1858, he 'positively required them to adopt the dress which the law permits and decorum requires'. In particular, on the 4th October, four days before the outbreak of the first assault, he pressed this subject at a Christian meeting, and a 'Dorcus Society' was formed to provide 'proper clothes' for the poor. No sooner did the Christian women 'cloth themselves decently' than the Sudras began to threaten to assault them.<sup>40</sup> There can be no doubt that this kind of behaviour on the part of the missionaries was one of the immediate causes of the disturbance.

However, needless to say, this was not the only cause of

---

<sup>39</sup> Report of the Jamestown Mission District for 1859, India Odds, Box 16, CWMA.

<sup>40</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1858, Trivandrum and Quilon Mission, p.7.

disturbance. As both the missionaries and Cullen, the Resident, acknowledged, the emancipation of the slaves in 1855 and the diffusion of Christianity itself were also important causes. Cullen wrote regarding the complaint of the higher castes who began to lose their privileges that:

I am frequently visited by large numbers of Proprietors, complaining bitterly that they lost the services on Sundays, and that their slaves had in other respects proved very refractory. Another subject of irritation has been the exemption of the part of all Shanars attached to the Mission for Oolium duties on Sundays, and from work connected with Hindoo Festivals or Places of Worship.<sup>41</sup>

The missionaries stated in their petition to the Raja that 'they [the high-caste Hindus] openly avow that their object in all this is to destroy the Christian cause in Travancore, and restore society to that state in which it existed previous to the year 1809'.<sup>42</sup>

Meanwhile, Queen Victoria's Proclamation issued on 1 November 1858 certainly helped to enlarge the disturbance, as

---

<sup>41</sup> Cullen to Chief Sec., 16 Feb. 1859, No.19, MPP 15 Mar. 1859, OIOC.

<sup>42</sup> Petition of the Missionaries of the LMS to the Raja of Travancore, 7 Feb. 1859, MPP, OIOC. The year 1809 was the one in which the revolt of Velu Thampi, a former Dewan, against the British ended. Thus, the breast-cloth disturbance at least partly involved some anti-British sentiment as well.

the Dewan, the Resident and the missionaries all agreed.<sup>43</sup> John Dennis, an LMS missionary, stated that 'since the Queen's Proclamation has become known among the people they have ... formed the opinion that the Queen is opposed to Missions and that she is displeased with all Missionaries'.<sup>44</sup> In fact, this Proclamation declared that the Queen and her government 'shall respect the rights, dignity, and honour of native princes'; ordered their officials and others that they should 'abstain from all interference with the religious belief or worship'; and desired that 'due regard be paid to the ancient rights, usages, and customs of India'.<sup>45</sup> Thus, the Proclamation certainly contained statements which encouraged the high-caste Hindus to feel justified in their behaviour against the Shanars and Christians. That is to say, in the eyes of the higher castes, the restriction regarding breast-cloths was an 'ancient customs' related to their religious beliefs, which the British declared they would respect. Moreover, the custom relating to breast-cloths had been a matter which was controlled or authorized by the Travancore state, again 'rights' which the Queen declared to respect.

Above all, there was considerable hatred on the part of the

---

<sup>43</sup> Jacob, A History of the London Missionary Society in South Travancore, p.125; Madava Row to Cullen, 12 Feb. 1859, No.196, MPP, OIOC; Robert L. Hardgrave, Jr, 'The Breast-Cloth Controversy: Caste Consciousness and Social Change in Southern Travancore', Indian Economic and Social History Review, 5,2, 1968, pp.181-2.

<sup>44</sup> Report, Nagercoil, 20 Jan. 1859, India Odds Box 16, CWMA.

<sup>45</sup> Parliamentary Papers, Vol.18, 1859, Paper No.110, pp.296-7.

Nayars and other higher castes towards the Shanars who were 'year by year rising in intelligence, wealth, and influence',<sup>46</sup> and this was perhaps the greatest underlying cause of the disturbance. Shungoonny Menon, apparently sympathizing with the higher castes to which he belonged, described how the Shanar converts rendered themselves 'obnoxious to the Sudra community' as follows:

For instance, one Shanar Puthathan Cutty and his wife, Eshakee, were the cultivators of Madom Pillay, a Sudra landed proprietor. These became converts and left Madom Pillay's service, and Puthathan Cutty subsequently became a Catechist under a Missionary, and his wife assumed a costume similar to that of Madom Pillay's wife. Now, both the Catechist and his wife came to Madom Pillay's house and began to converse with him, on terms of equality, commencing a discussion with Madom Pillay on the subject of religion and calling him 'an ignorant man' and a sinner ... Was it possible for Madom Pillay not to resent the impertinence of those who were but lately his dependents...<sup>47</sup>

The newly appointed Dewan Madava Row endeavoured to suppress the disturbance. The missionaries greatly appreciated

---

<sup>46</sup> Evangelical Magazine, June 1859, p.442.

<sup>47</sup> P. Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1983), first published 1878, pp.377-8.



his efforts. The LMS missionaries stated in their petition of 7 February 1859 that 'we are of the opinion that the Dewan is most anxious to suppress it', and demanded a temporary extension of the Dewan's power in order to deal with the lower officials who were reluctant to suppress the disturbance.<sup>48</sup>

As to the Madras government, they were consistent in their attitudes criticizing this caste disability and demanded that the Travancore government abolish this restriction. In January 1859, even before the missionaries' first petition to the Raja since the outbreak of this disturbance, the Madras government ordered the Resident to inform the Travancore government that 'such prohibitions as those contained in the Circular Order of May 1814, or in the Proclamation of 3 February 1829, are unsuited to the present age, and unworthy of an enlightened Prince', and stated that the Raja was 'not to look for the support of the British Government in any attempts to maintain them, as respects any class of his subjects'.<sup>49</sup> The Governor of Madras also stated on 6 May 1859 that:

I have seldom met with a case in which, not only truth and justice, but every feeling of our common humanity are so entirely on one side. The whole civilised world would cry shame upon us if we did not make a firm stand

---

<sup>48</sup> Petition of the LMS in Travancore to the Rajah, 7 Feb. 1859, p.133, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>49</sup> G.O. No.75, 27 Jan. 1859, MPP, OIOC.

on such an occasion.<sup>50</sup>

Receiving considerable pressure from the Madras government in this way, the Travancore state decided to issue a proclamation. Madava Row wrote to Cullen on 17 May 1859 regarding a proposed proclamation that:

His Highness now proposes to abolish all rules prohibiting the covering of the upper parts of the persons of Shanar women and to grant them perfect liberty to meet the requirements of decency any way they may deem proper, with the simple restriction that they do not imitate the same mode of dress that appertains to the higher castes.<sup>51</sup>

However, the LMS missionaries were not satisfied with this proposed proclamation. Accordingly, they petitioned the Madras government on 18 July 1859. As to the deficiency of the proclamation, they pointed out that the proposed proclamation was dealing only with the women of the Shanar Community, while 'the women of the Erлуvar, Pariah and some other castes ... are left subject to the same barbarous and indecent restrictions as before'.<sup>52</sup> But the missionaries clearly did

---

<sup>50</sup> Minutes of the President, 7 May 1859, Foreign Dept. File No. Pol.12 Aug, NAI.

<sup>51</sup> Madava Row to Cullen, 17 May 1859, No.895, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>52</sup> Memorial of the LMS in Travancore to Trevelyan, 18 July 1859, MPP, OIOC.

not protest against 'the simple restriction' which prohibited the wearing of clothes similar to those of the higher castes in spite of the fact that this was obvious inequality. This was probably because it was not the right to imitate the higher castes but the right to wear clothes properly (as they understood it) that the missionaries demanded. Undoubtedly, the missionaries themselves did not welcome Shanars imitating the higher castes, because the imitation (in other words 'Sanskritization') must have been seen by the missionaries as the implicit acceptance of caste system or dominant caste ideology. Meanwhile, the missionaries dealt with much broader problems in their petition. They objected to restrictions on erecting places of worship; the insecurity of the property and lives of the missionaries and their families; the partial judicial system; the practical continuance of slavery even after its official abolition; the system of uriyam (forced) labour; and various caste restrictions.

Despite the missionaries' petition, the British authorities approved the proposed proclamation, though they demanded the issue of a proclamation as a 'expedient' measure.<sup>53</sup> That was undoubtedly because the Madras government compromised with the Travancore government with a view to avoid sudden change and to preserve public tranquility. It thus accepted at least partly the view of the Raja and the Dewan. Madava Row stated in May 1859 that 'the sudden and total abolition of all

---

<sup>53</sup> G.O. No.347, 6 Jun. 1859, MPP, OIOC; Sec. of State for India, to Governor in Council, Fort St. George, 19 Aug. 1859, MPP, OIOC.

distinctions of dress, which have from time immemorial distinguished one caste from another, may produce most undesirable impressions on the minds of the larger portion of his subjects and cause their serious discontent'.<sup>54</sup> Thus, a proclamation was issued on 26 July 1859. It declared that:

Whereas it is our earnest desire to satisfy all parties as far as possible, it is hereby proclaimed, that there is no objection to the rest of the Shanar females wearing the Cooppayom, in the same manner as Christian Shanar women, nor to Shanar females of all sects wearing a thick cloth in the way the Mookoovar women do, or covering their bosom in any other manner, provided they avoid adopting the dress used by the women of the higher castes.<sup>55</sup>

At that time, however, the Madras government was greatly determined to abolish caste disabilities and to introduce 'civilization', even though it sometimes compromised with the Travancore state as well as the higher castes and others.<sup>56</sup> In November 1859, four months after the proclamation, the Governor of Madras expressed his hope that 'the time is not far distant when His Highness the Rajah will abolish all legal restrictions upon female dress in his dominions'. In December

---

<sup>54</sup> Madava Row to Cullen, 17 May 1859, No.895, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>55</sup> H. Drury to Chief Sec., 30 Sep 1859, MPP, p.99, OIOC.

<sup>56</sup> Minute by Walter Elliot, 3 Mar. 1859, MPP 15 Mar. 1859, p.285, OIOC.

1859, more than half a year after the suppression of the disturbance, the Governor still showed a great interest in caste disabilities in Travancore and expressed his view in his memorandum to the newly appointed Resident, Francis Maltby, that:

It may seem to some a small matter whether the women of the inferior castes in Travancore are allowed to dress as they like or not; but, in one point of view, it is extremely important. This is no sumptuary law, but a badge of degradation. The maintenance or withdrawal of the restriction, is also a trial of strength between the old caste domination and the advancing forces of liberty and civilization.<sup>57</sup>

Accordingly, the Governor demanded that 'a decisive course should be adopted', and that the Resident should tell the Raja that 'such a barbarism is unknown in any other country in the world, and that nothing short of the entire removal of all restrictions, leaving the females to dress as they think fit, will satisfy the Government both here and at home. ... and that even if the use of cold steel is necessary this will be afforded'.<sup>58</sup>

Sir Charles Wood, the Secretary of State for India,

---

<sup>57</sup> Minute by the President, No.15, 19 Dec. 1859, MPP, p.240, emphasis in original, OIOC.

<sup>58</sup> Memorandum of subjects discussed at the interview with Trevelyan, 7 Dec. 1859, MPP, OIOC.

however, criticized the expression of 'the use of cold steel' and stated that 'such language as this does not rightly embody the views of Her Majesty's Government'. But, otherwise, his policy was very similar to the policy of the Governor of Madras. Wood stated in July 1860 that 'it is my desire that the British Resident at Travancore exercise his moral influence with the Rajah to induce him to remove all existing restrictions on the dress of the female inhabitants of the country, by such means as are not likely to disturb the public tranquility'.<sup>59</sup> Consequently, a similar proclamation was issued in 1864 regarding the cloths worn by the females of the Izhava and other low castes.<sup>60</sup>

It is true that, as the above statement of Wood suggests, to preserve 'the public tranquility' was one of the most important policies of the British after the Mutiny. However, as far as Travancore was concerned, their attitudes were considerably determined against the caste disabilities, which were sometimes regarded as 'barbarism' or as against 'liberty and civilization'. In this sense, the Queen's Proclamation did not have much effect in shaping the policy of the British towards Travancore in the early 1860s.

These rather aggressive attitudes on the part of the British authorities towards the existing social customs were undoubtedly what the missionaries desired. The missionaries were also very keen on criticizing what they considered social

---

<sup>59</sup> C. Wood to Governor, Fort St. George, 24 July 1860, MPP, 28 Aug 1860, OIOC.

<sup>60</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.305.

problems in Travancore such as slavery and caste disabilities. Thus, the British authorities and the missionaries had, in a sense, a common approach to social customs in Travancore in the mid-nineteenth century. Accordingly, the missionaries could largely expect and even receive the practical support of the British authorities.

### William Lee's Case and Caste Disabilities

These attitudes of the British authorities seem not to have changed in the 1860s and 1870s, and to have been clearly seen in the case of an LMS missionary who was assaulted by Brahmins in south Travancore. This incident occurred in a Brahmin village (called an agraharam), which was 'situated in an isolated country place' and was 'entirely a series of Brahmin houses closely packed'.<sup>61</sup> Usually, the lower castes and foreigners were not allowed to pass through the village. However, William Lee, a missionary of the LMS, tried to go through the agraharam in south Travancore and was assaulted by the Brahmins. As a result, this incident drew the attention of the Madras government. It strongly denounced the attitudes of the Travancore government, which was reluctant to punish the offenders.

The case happened on 16 August 1868, when the Reverend William Lee tried to pass through the agraharam, called Punjalingapuram, on his way to a village in south Travancore.

---

<sup>61</sup> Madava Row to Resident, 5 Nov. 1868, No.4699-M1339, MPP, p.349, OIOC.

When he approached the agraharam, several Brahmins tried to induce him to use another way, and he obeyed their request in order not to 'hurt the feeling of the people'. But, on his return journey, he passed through the Brahmin street since the other road was 'very rough and troublesome'. Then he and his horsekeeper, 'a pariah', were assaulted.<sup>62</sup> The Madras government described this assault, certainly relying heavily on the account of the missionary himself, as follows:

... the Brahmin threw 'a copper-vessel' at him, and beat his horsekeeper with a rope. The bystanders took part in the assault by throwing stones which struck Mr. Lee, his horsekeeper, and his pony, but in spite of this, they passed through the street and rejoined, at the other side of the village, certain Catechists and others who had gone round by the way Mr. Lee had declined to take. Mr. Lee returned on foot to the village, however, in search of a small leather bag which his horse-keeper was carrying and had dropped in the melee, and while he was 'parleying with the people' regarding his missing property a Brahmin struck him 'with his hand over the left cheek-bone' and 'several others also struck' him 'over the head with sticks.'<sup>63</sup>

The Travancore government was reluctant to punish the

---

<sup>62</sup> G.O. No.284, 11 Sep. 1869, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>63</sup> Ibid.



Brahmins. In fact, the offenders were just fined Rs.30 each, which was, according to the Resident, 'certainly no great burden upon these wealthy Brahmins'.<sup>64</sup> The Travancore government's view of this incident was that the agraharam purported to be private property which had been donated to the Brahmins; therefore, the Brahmins of the village 'were entitled to deny to the public the right of way through the main street of the village, until such right of way was declared by a Court of Law'; and they also had a right to prevent their homes from being desecrated in 'self-defence'.<sup>65</sup> Therefore, according to Madava Row, 'it was the duty of Mr. Lee, under the circumstances, to avoid risking so probable a breach of the peace'.<sup>66</sup> The Dewan also criticized the missionaries' attitudes in general by stating that:

some of the Missionary gentlemen would ... seem to be under the impression that it would be quite lawful for them to take upon themselves the enforcement of rights like that in question, even to the extent of shooting down those that would resist such action.<sup>67</sup>

However, the Madras government criticized these views by stating that, in the Madras Presidency and other parts of

---

<sup>64</sup> H. Newill to Ch. Sec., 22 Dec. 1868, No.80, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>65</sup> Madava Row to Resident, 5 Nov. 1868, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>66</sup> Ibid.

<sup>67</sup> Ibid.

Travancore, 'Men of all castes and nationalities' passed every day through 'streets exclusively inhabited by Brahmins' and approached their wells and pagodas. It accordingly ordered the Resident to 'strongly urge the His Highness the adoption for the future' of the principle that 'The public high streets of all towns are the property, not of any particular caste, but of the whole community, and that every man, be his caste or religion what it may, has a right to the full use of them'.<sup>68</sup> Moreover, the Governor of Madras blamed Madava Row for having not used the appropriate 'terms of respect and courtesy' in referring to the missionary.

Furthermore, this case caused the Madras government to pay more attention to caste disabilities in Travancore, and, in September 1869, about one year after the assault, it ordered the Resident to furnish 'a report upon any substantial disabilities or oppression to which the lowest castes in Travancore are still practically subjected'.<sup>69</sup> Six months after this order, G.A. Ballard, the Resident, submitted a report, in which he itemized the disabilities as follows:

---

<sup>68</sup> G.O. No.284, 11 Sep. 1869, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>69</sup> Ibid. The Madras government also stated regarding education that 'the establishment of septate government schools for high and low caste pupil is most strongly to be deprecated as tending to sanction the continuance of distinctions which are most injurious to the progress of people of Travancore.' As will be seen in the next chapter, in 1875, five years later, the Travancore government started to give a great deal of grant-in-aid to the missionaries' institutions, which eventually reduced the responsibility of the government towards education for the lower castes and helped the government to avoid the confusion in government schools which could have occurred by admitting the lower caste students, as will be seen in Chapter 3 in more detail.

1. They [the lowest castes] are not permitted to use roads open to the public of higher castes.
2. They are not permitted to enter or approach within a certain distance of many Courts and public offices.
3. They are excluded from the Government Schools.
4. They are excluded from public service.<sup>70</sup>

The Madras government, considering these disabilities as 'a serious blot upon the high character which the administration of Travancore has gained',<sup>71</sup> urged it to abolish these disabilities. Also, comparing the situation in Travancore with that in British Malabar, they stated that 'The same prejudices, the same difficulties have ... been completely overcome under British rule in the District of Malabar, where the caste[s] affected are much the same as in Travancore'.<sup>72</sup> As a result, the Travancore government decided to make law courts accessible to 'all classes' in 1870 and also issued a circular throwing open most of the public roads in Travancore to all castes and communities, as will be seen in more detail in Chapter 5.<sup>73</sup>

However, it was also certain that the Madras government did not impose these orders without considering the existing

---

<sup>70</sup> Ballard to Acting Ch. Sec., 9 Mar. 1870, MPP, 23 April 1870, OIOC.

<sup>71</sup> G.O. No.143, 23 April 1870, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid.

<sup>73</sup> Dewan to Judges, 7 Apr. 1870, in G.O. No.158, 9 May 1870, MPP, OIOC; 'The Pulayas of Travancore', Church Missionary Intelligencer, Apr. 1883, p.202.

social order or the nature of this Hindu state. In fact, it compromised in many ways. It agreed to exclude from their order roads which passed 'too close to an important place of particular sanctity'. As to the opening of the public service relating to the devaswom and uttupura, forming separate institutions was suggested instead of opening the government service completely to the lower castes.<sup>74</sup> Moreover, it seems important that the Travancore government apparently ignored some of the above 'advice' in practice. It was not until 1910 that the government declared open government schools for the avarna castes by the Education Code, and the separation of the Devaswom from the Revenue Department was carried out only in 1922, about half a century later.<sup>75</sup>

However, although the policy of the Madras government thus contained a number of compromises, it is still true that the attitude of the government towards caste disabilities was a very determined one. It was very keen on removing caste disabilities from Travancore. Hence, it resolutely intervened in the existing social and religious customs of Travancore.

#### A Petition from the Native Christians

However, the attitude of the Madras government towards caste disabilities apparently changed towards the end of the

---

<sup>74</sup> Ibid.

<sup>75</sup> P. Rajagopalachari, Note on the Administration of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914), pp.53-4; Velu Pillai, The Travancore State Manual (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1940), vol.1, p.573.

nineteenth century. In the 1880s, free access to certain streets and villages was still denied to the lower castes and the Christians from these avarna castes in many places. In order to improve this situation, native Christians of south Travancore, at the instance of a number of LMS missionaries, petitioned the Travancore and Madras governments as well as the Government of India. In the petition to the Madras government, they claimed that the proclamation and circular which were issued after the Lee case should be enforced. Then they criticized the British Resident by stating that 'he did nothing towards carrying out the British Government order', even after receiving their petitions 'several times'.<sup>76</sup>

In fact, J.C. Hannyngton (Resident, 1881-1892) was far more sympathetic towards the higher castes than the Christians from the lower castes. Regarding the petitions from the Christians, he wrote to the Madras government in 1887 that:

I am myself sorry that Hindus - and especially educated Hindus - should hold views which appear to me to be absurd, but I should be sorry willingly to offend their prejudices, and I have no doubt the Hindu exercises the same tolerance towards me in respect to many things which I do, which appear to him to be not merely absurd, but wicked.<sup>77</sup>

---

<sup>76</sup> S. Parinbanayaga Margunden and other native Christians in south Travancore, to Governor in Council, 7 Oct. 1887, G.O. No.925, 8 Dec. 1887, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>77</sup> Hannyngton to Ch. Sec., 24 Nov. 1887, MPP, OIOC.

The British Resident had, therefore, not the least intention of intervening in the matter on the caste disabilities relating to the Brahmin streets or agraharams in the late 1880s. The Madras government took the same attitude, at least in practice. After receiving this letter from Hannyngton, the Madras government concluded that 'no action is necessary'.<sup>78</sup> There is no question that this attitude was very different from that of the Madras government which was taken in the Lee case in the 1860s.

Realizing that nothing had been done, the Christians sent their petition to the Secretary of State for India in London in February 1891. The petitioners demanded that a proclamation should be issued by the Travancore government for 'free access into all streets and villages'.<sup>79</sup> But the Madras government was firmly against the Christians. Answering the enquiry from London, it stated that 'the Circular of 21st July 1884' of the Travancore government was enough. This circular had notified that 'the courts and cutcherries [government offices] of the State and all public roads and market-places should be open to all persons without distinction'. The Madras government wrote that:

More than this cannot be expected, and, as observed by Mr. Hannyngton, the petitioners in reality seek the abolition of the religious prejudice which is so strong

---

<sup>78</sup> G.O. No.925, 8 Dec. 1887, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>79</sup> Petition, 19 Feb. 1891, G.O. No.4, 26 June 1891, MPP, OIOC.

in Travancore and the neighbouring State of Cochin and which may be expected to prevail at all times ... In these circumstances, we cannot recommend any action in favour of the memorialist.<sup>80</sup>

Thus, the Madras government seems to have been determined not to intervene in social and religious customs in Travancore by the late nineteenth century. Consequently, its attitudes towards the missionaries and Christians became unfavourable compared with those of the 1850s and 1860s which we have examined. This change of its attitudes towards social and religious customs at that time can be seen more clearly in the case of the civil disabilities regarding the rights of inheritance of Christian converts from Hindus.

#### Inheritance Law and Civil Disabilities

Almost at the same time as the Christians in south Travancore petitioned for the free use of public streets, the missionaries advanced the claim for the inheritance rights of Christian converts. In Travancore as well as in Cochin and Mysore, Christian converts from Hinduism lost all rights of inheritance, while, in British India and other princely states, they acquired the rights after the introduction of Act XXI of 1850. The Travancore government issued a proclamation

---

<sup>80</sup> Wenlock, J.C. Dormer, H.E. Stokes, J.H. Garstin, to Sec. of State for India, 26 Jun. 1891, in G.O. No.4, 26 June 1891, MPP, OIOC.

in 1869 and announced that converts were given the rights of inheritance when a deceased person left no heirs except converts.<sup>81</sup> But in most cases, converts to Christianity and other religions received no property or support from his family.

The missionaries of both the LMS and CMS strongly demanded the introduction of this act in these princely states, and this question was frequently raised in the 1890s. That was at least partly because the missionaries began to show more interest in the higher castes and to realize that this problem was one of the principal factors which prevented the conversion of the higher castes. E.J. Edmonds, an LMS missionary, stated that this inability was 'a great hindrance to the spread of the Gospel'.<sup>82</sup> Thus, the controversy continued for more than a decade. The Travancore and the Cochin government, not surprisingly, strongly opposed the extension of this code. Eventually, no measure was adopted to secure the rights of converts from Hinduism.

One of the earliest substantial actions of the missionaries regarding this matter began in 1887. In that year, the LMS missionaries sent a memorial to the Maharaja.<sup>83</sup> Also, in 1888, the Travancore government received a memorial from the

---

<sup>81</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.III, p.568.

<sup>82</sup> Quilon, 1899, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>83</sup> Petition to Maharajah, J. Duthie to Ag. Resident, 15 July 1887, G.O. No.295, 15 June 1889, MPP, OIOC.



CMS.<sup>84</sup> After receiving these memorials, the Travancore government appointed a committee of five public officers. Two of them subsequently became Dewans, while four were, or had been, Travancore High Court Judges.<sup>85</sup> This committee submitted a report in March 1889, which discussed the matter largely in the cases of the Hindus who follow the marumakkattayam (matrilineal inheritance) and the makkattayam (patrilineal one). The former was largely adopted by Nayars, and the latter by Brahmins. According to the report, the marumakkattayam law and usage 'treat the family as a corporation' and 'allow no partition', though each member had a right to be maintained in the house. Therefore, unless a convert became civilly dead, he had to be accommodated in the house. However, this situation would create a difficult situation for the Hindu members of the family. That is, the presence of a convert in the house could 'not fail to cause endless annoyance to himself and his Hindu sheshakars [relatives], and lead to constant disputes and ruinous litigation'. The report continued to state that the adoption of the law in British India 'would affect the throne itself', as the ruling family also adopted the marumakkattayam law. That is to say, Travancore might have a Christian Maharaja unless the converts were excluded from the inheritance. The committee also emphasized that Hinduism was the established

---

<sup>84</sup> Rama Row to C.A. Neve, May 1889, G.O. No.295, 15 June 1889, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>85</sup> Despatch from Sec. of State for India, No.57, 5 July 1901, Foreign Department Notes, May 1902, Nos.116-125, NAI.

religion of the State.<sup>86</sup>

Regarding the makkattayam law of the Brahmins and others, the committee admitted that the law allowed partition and recognized individual right. However, the report insisted that 'all rights of succession to property are based upon competency to perform certain religious rites', especially the funeral rites which were 'essential to one's salvation'. As an individual could not adopt a son unless his real son was regarded as civilly dead, the adoption of the law of British India would become a serious problem.<sup>87</sup> In other words, 'To a man who believes in the efficacy of funeral rites it must be most harassing to feel on his death-bed that the conversion of his only son, without the power to substitute another by adoption, has deprived him of his salvation'.<sup>88</sup> Thus, the committee unanimously concluded that 'it is highly inexpedient to grant the prayer of the memorialist, which would involve a serious infraction of the rights of the unconverted members of a Hindu family'.<sup>89</sup>

However, in addition to these mainly legal matters, there were undoubtedly more serious problems for the Hindus and the state. The introduction of the new law would not only get rid of a great hindrance to the conversion to Christianity and to

---

<sup>86</sup> Lee-Warner Collections, 'Christian Converts', MSS Eur. F.92/18, OIOC.

<sup>87</sup> Ibid.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid.

<sup>89</sup> To Dewan, 13 March 1889, Intl-B, Dec 1898, Foreign Dept. NAI.

other religions but would also more positively promote conversion: by becoming a Christian, the partition of the family property, which was by custom impartible, would become much easier. Undoubtedly this was one of the great concerns of the state, and the British also well recognized this respect. Clearly on the side of the high-caste Hindus and the Travancore state, Lord Curzon (Viceroy, 1899-1905) wrote in 1901 that:

One fine day the Missionaries come along and persuade some miserable Hindu (usually the scum of creation) to become a convert. They then claim that he should take his share out of the family property, and break down the Native system of inheritance in his individual interest. Of course, in practice, this is a premium on conversion; for, if every Native knows that he can make into his own property what was previously corporate property, it will be a great incentive to the missionary propaganda.<sup>90</sup>

Meanwhile, after 1889, the question of the disabilities of converts was raised from time to time by the Madras government, undoubtedly as a result of the continuous petitions from the missionaries. At first, its attitude was not completely unsympathetic to the missionaries and the Christian converts. Considering that the committee's report was 'not likely to meet with general acceptance', the Madras

---

<sup>90</sup> Curzon to Godley, 9 Apr. 1901, Curzon Papers, MSS Eur F/111/160, OIOC.

government, in 1895, instructed the Resident 'to advise the Darbars [the governments of the princely states] to introduce a regulation "securing to a Nayar convert to Christianity his right to maintenance from his tarwad [the Nayar joint-family] property, whilst declaring him at the same time ineligible, by reason of his change of faith, to become the Karnavan [the manager] of the tarwad or the trustee of a Hindu institution"'.<sup>91</sup> Both the Travancore and Cochin governments, were however, strongly opposed even to this modification and did not accept any change regarding the inheritance law. There was also 'a plaintive appeal' by the Raja of Cochin himself.<sup>92</sup> Thus, the 'advice' of the British Resident was practically ignored.

After recognizing the failure of the previous petitions, the missionary societies in England, including the CMS and the LMS sent a memorial to the Viceroy in 1897.<sup>93</sup> The Madras government, in their reply to the enquiry of the Government of India, stated that 'The Travancore and Cochin States were both opposed to the introduction of the proposed modified legislation and that the Governor did not propose to proceed with it'.<sup>94</sup> The Government of India approved this policy by

---

<sup>91</sup> From Secretary of State, 30 Mar. 1901, Foreign Dept. Notes, Intl., May 25, p.2, NAI.

<sup>92</sup> Despatch from Sec. of State for India, No.57, 5 July 1901, Foreign Department Notes, May 1902, Nos.116-125, NAI.

<sup>93</sup> Memorial from certain Missionary Societies in England, Intl-B, Dec 1898, Foreign Dept., NAI.

<sup>94</sup> From Secretary of State, 30 Mar. 1901, Foreign Dept. Notes, Intl., May 25, p.2, NAI.

stating that 'the introduction of even very modified legislation on the lines of Act XXI of 1850 is quite unsuited to the condition of Travancore and Cochin'.<sup>95</sup>

But the missionaries were keen on this matter at the time. Even after this decision, the missionaries sent a number of memorials to the governments of both India and Madras, but the policy did not change. Apparently, it was far more important for the British authorities to maintain the existing social order than to relieve the Christian converts. The Madras government stated in 1901 criticizing the legislation of Act XXI of 1850 itself that:

Act XXI of 1850 ... became law at a time when the policy of impartial recognition of all existing religious systems had not yet been declared. The provision of the Act undermine the leading principle of the Hindu religious system, and its enactment at the present day in British India would unquestionably be regarded as a flagrant violation of the Queen's Proclamation of 1858.<sup>96</sup>

Thus, the attitudes of the British authorities towards social problems in Travancore greatly changed during the second half of the nineteenth century. Undoubtedly, the British became much more sensitive to the religious feelings of the people

---

<sup>95</sup> Ibid.

<sup>96</sup> Stokes to H.S. Barnes, Letter No.600, 9 Oct. 1901, MPP, OIOC.

and seem to have tried to avoid anything which might be regarded as a measure of support for the missionaries. According to the Chief Secretary to the Madras government, the demand from the missionaries was 'obviously made for proselytizing purposes, and any action which Government take in the direction of complying with that demand will and can only be regarded as that of proselytizing power'.<sup>97</sup> Thus, 'intervention by the British Government in this matter is not only unnecessary but both on general and political grounds undesirable'.<sup>98</sup>

Lord Curzon also expressed a similar view. As we have seen, Curzon strongly opposed the introduction of Act XXI of 1850 into Travancore. Regarding this matter, he also stated that 'we must be very punctilious in dealing with the religious and customary scruples of Native populations'.<sup>99</sup> It may be true that, as S.R. Ashton has pointed out, 'Under Curzon, British intervention in the internal affairs of the [princely] states reached its zenith'.<sup>100</sup> But it is also certain that even Curzon was very cautious when dealing with the religious feelings of Indians and tried to avoid intervening in these matters.

Thus, the Madras government did not adopt any policy for

---

<sup>97</sup> Ibid.

<sup>98</sup> Ibid.

<sup>99</sup> Curzon to Hamilton, 1 Apr. 1907, Curzon Papers, MSS Eur F/111/160, OIOC.

<sup>100</sup> S.R. Ashton, British Policy towards the Indian States, 1905-1939 (New Delhi: Selectbook Service Syndicate, 1985), p.24.

the Christian converts regarding this matter, and the Christian converts continued to be denied rights to ancestral properties in Travancore as well as in Cochin and Mysore. This also means that it became more difficult for the missionaries to obtain support from the Madras government, which increasingly tried to avoid being seen as 'proselytizing power', undoubtedly being faced with the emergence of Hindu revivalism and Indian nationalism. This situation certainly allowed, to a great extent, the Travancore government to adopt more conservative policies in 1890s, as will be seen next.

#### The Changing Attitude of the Travancore State

While the missionaries raised the question of the inheritance rights of Christian converts and, by doing so, challenged the existing social order in the 1890s, the Travancore government seems to have become more conservative and hostile to the missionaries. It adopted a number of anti-missionary policies, and the missionaries had virtually no support from the British authorities in these cases as well. The enactment of the Travancore Penal Code was one example.

The Penal Code Bill was finally passed by the Travancore Legislative Council in 1896. Section 182 of this code prohibited the erection of a place of worship without the sanction of the government. It became a criminal offence from 1899 and offenders were punished with 'a term not exceeding one year or with fine not exceeding five hundred rupees or

both'.<sup>101</sup> The official reason for this enactment was to prevent 'sectional strifes and riots'.<sup>102</sup> But, this was considered to be an anti-Christian measure by the missionaries.

Although this code provoked a great deal of opposition from the missionaries, this was not the first attempt by the Travancore state to control the erection of places of worship. As we have seen, the then Rani issued a proclamation in order to settle the 'quarrels' between the Shanars and Nayars as early as in 1829, and, by the 4th clause of the proclamation, free erection of chattrams [rest houses largely for the higher castes], churches, schoolrooms, mosques and all other places of worship was prohibited.<sup>103</sup> This clause, however, had not worked in practice, and most churches and other places of worship had been erected 'without any reference to the proclamation in question'.<sup>104</sup> Therefore, the new Penal Code Bill greatly shocked the missionaries.

Thus, on 5 May 1896, the missionaries of the CMS and the LMS sent a memorial to the Legislative Council of Travancore and insisted that 'riots and bloodshed' had not arisen from the erection of these places. To the missionaries, it was clear that this measure was adopted in order to prevent the

---

<sup>101</sup> Copy of Memorial sent to Madras Govt, Knowles to Thompson, 11 July 1898, Folder 6, TL Box 18, CWMA.

<sup>102</sup> J.D. Reeds to Ch. Sec., 26 Nov. 1896, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid.

<sup>104</sup> Memorial of the CMS and the LMS, to Travancore Legislative Council, 5 May 1896, in G.O. No.565, 24 Aug. 1897, MPP, OIOC.



diffusion of Christianity. They stated in the memorial that:

whereas the erection of Hindu temples on quite new sites are [sic] of rare occurrence, the Christian population is a growing one ... Consequently, the new law would affect the Hindu community in a very small degree, while it would certainly hinder the progress of Christianity and so could not fail to produce the impression that it was intended to do so.<sup>105</sup>

In addition, the missionaries were also afraid that all the Tahsildars, who practically had the right to sanction or refuse the construction of religious buildings, were high-caste Hindus, and therefore that 'Christians would be continually subjected to persecution'.<sup>106</sup>

The Madras government did not show much sympathy with the missionaries this time as well, and, in fact, almost ignored the missionaries' petition. After receiving the copy of the missionaries' petition to the Legislative Council from the Resident, the Madras government stated in its order relating to clause 182 of this code that 'The Resident will see that this section is not unfairly worked as regards Christians'.<sup>107</sup> After that, the missionaries sent a memorial directly to the Madras government, but they only received a

---

<sup>105</sup> Ibid.

<sup>106</sup> Ibid.

<sup>107</sup> G.O. No.565, 24 Aug. 1897, MPP, OIOC.

similar reply.<sup>108</sup> Thus, this clause, which was undoubtedly peculiar to Travancore and Cochin,<sup>109</sup> was finally enforced and from 1899 building of places of worship without permission became a criminal offence.<sup>110</sup>

As will be seen in the next chapter, the education reforms of 1894 were seen by the missionaries as an anti-Christian policy on the part of the Travancore government. In 1901-02, the Travancore government also decided to prohibit the use of readers and text-books other than approved ones, and at about the same time they ordered that no religious education should be given in school hours. Thus, anti-missionary policies were obviously adopted during the 1890s and early 1900s, and these policies were practically supported by the Madras government, which was reluctant to intervene in the social and religious customs of the princely states at that time. Accordingly, almost all the petitions of the missionaries were rejected by the British authorities.

As to the attitudes of the Travancore state towards the missionaries, the change of Dewan from T. Rama Row to S. Sungarasubbier in 1892 was one of the most obvious signs of this shift. Rama Row was educated at the Nagercoil Seminary of the LMS and 'had a wonderful knowledge of the Bible'.<sup>111</sup>

---

<sup>108</sup> Knowles to Thompson, 20 Sep. 1898, Folder 6, TL Box 18, CWMA.

<sup>109</sup> The Travancore and Missions in Travancore State, W.A. Garstin, File No. 454-p(s)/36, FPP, NAI.

<sup>110</sup> Knowles to Thompson, 5 Dec. 1898, TL Box 18, CWMA.

<sup>111</sup> Painter, 'The CMS and the Depressed Classes', Church Missionary Intelligencer, May 1904, p.339.

When he was a Dewan Peishkar (an officer directly below the Dewan in rank), Rama Row helped the missionaries to hold an evening school among the prisoners in jail. Samuel Mateer stated in his annual report for 1877 that 'We are much indebted to the kind and liberal countenance of the Dewan Peishkar ... for the continuance of this school'.<sup>112</sup> Also, after his retirement, Rama Row built a hospital and a school to be handed over to the management of the LMS.<sup>113</sup> However, the next Dewan, S. Shungarasubbier, 'came into office distinctly opposed to mission work' and stayed in office until 1898.<sup>114</sup> During his Dewanship, a number of policies directed against the missionaries were adopted.

### Conclusion

Queen Victoria's Proclamation of 1858 was certainly one of the important turning points in British policy towards princely states as well as that towards social and religious customs in India. As we have seen, this proclamation clearly declared that the British government would respect the 'rights, dignity, and honour of native princes' and 'the ancient rights, usages, and customs of India'. However, at least as far as British policy towards Travancore was concerned, this proclamation did not have much effect in the 1860s and 1870s.

---

<sup>112</sup> Quilon, 1877, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>113</sup> LMS Annual Report, 111th, 1906, p.130.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid.

The British authorities, including the Madras government, at that time seem to have been more interested in the idea of the introduction of what they called 'civilization'. In fact, they intervened rather enthusiastically against caste disabilities including breast-cloth restrictions, even though they avoided radical reforms at the same time in order to maintain the 'public tranquility'. In effect, the attitudes of the British authorities were largely congruent with those of the missionaries at that time. The missionaries also strongly criticized the existing social order such as slavery and caste disabilities and endeavoured to abolish them. In this sense, the missionaries enjoyed a favourable relationship with the British authorities, even though the British, except a few very 'zealous' Residents, avoided taking part in the missionaries' activities directly.

However, from the late nineteenth century onwards, British policy in this area changed considerably, and a kind of principle that the British should not intervene in the social and religious customs in India was finally established. In other words, one of the main ideas of the Queen's Proclamation gradually gained its effect upon the colonial administration in the 1880s and 1890s.

Not surprisingly, this situation was largely unfavourable for the missionaries. It became very difficult for them to achieve their goals through pressure from the Madras government to the Travancore state, as the case of the inheritance law clearly shows. Consequently, the missionaries seem to have come to pay more regard to the Maharaja and his

government. The difference of attitude between Samuel Mateer and I.H. Hacker, both of whom were LMS missionaries, seem to illustrate the change. In 1871, Mateer stated that Travancore was, 'though nominally an independent state', 'in reality ... tributary to the British Government'.<sup>115</sup> On the other hand, thirty-six years later, Hacker stated that the Maharaja 'has his own administration ... and ... has perfect freedom in the management of his own affairs'.<sup>116</sup>

Moreover, after the British openly adopted a policy of non-interference in the early twentieth century, as we have seen in the previous chapter, the situation around the missionaries became much worse. Especially, in the 1930s, as will be seen in Chapter 5, the missionaries became very careful in petitioning the British authorities as they knew that it might provoke much greater hostility towards them.

Meanwhile, as the principle of non-interference with the social and religious customs largely established, the attitudes of the Travancore state towards missionaries also greatly changed. Particularly in the 1890s, the Travancore government adopted a number of anti-missionary policies. However, it was still true that the Travancore state needed the missionaries' help in areas such as education and medicine, and, partly for this reason, the relationship between the missionaries and the state did not become worse at least until the 1930s. In the next two chapters, we will

---

<sup>115</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.66.

<sup>116</sup> I.H. Hacker, A Hundred Years in Travancore (London: H.R. Allenson, 1908), p.11.

examine how the missionaries and the Travancore state co-operated and competed in the areas of education and medicine.

## CHAPTER 3

## EDUCATION: COMPROMISE AND COMPETITION

Introduction

As we have seen in Chapter 1, Travancore was 'a purely Hindu state', which was dedicated to Sri Padmanabha in the eighteenth century. This dedication was undoubtedly the most important ideological basis for the legitimacy of the Maharaja's rule. The Maharajas, as servants of this tutelary god, performed a number of state rituals, provided 'charities' for Brahmins and undertook the management of the temples. Protecting Hinduism was one of the greatest concerns of the Maharajas and their government. Therefore, the activities of the missionaries were naturally considered as being by nature harmful to the state. The missionaries not only criticized existing social and religious customs but also tried to convert as many Hindus as possible to Christianity. In fact, they acquired a huge number of converts in Travancore. Thus, the Hindu state and the Christian missionaries potentially had a very strained relationship.

However, their relationship did not deteriorate considerably. On the contrary, they almost always maintained a favourable relationship, and this aspect of their relations has not been paid enough attention to. The missionaries often

praised the 'enlightened' Maharajas, and the state provided a large amount of donations and grants to the missionaries. That was largely because the state compromised with the missionaries for the purpose of 'modernization'. To the state which was trying to transform itself into a 'modern state', missionary educational and medical activities were extremely useful. Thus, the Hindu state not only permitted missionary activities but also helped them by giving donations and grants. The Travancore state thus took a kind of 'ambivalent' attitude towards the missionaries. On the one hand, the state compromised and used the missionaries, but, on the other hand, it tried to reduce the influence of the missionaries so as to protect the basis of the Hindu state. In this chapter, we will examine what policies the Travancore government adopted in the area of education and how this 'ambivalent' relationship, which was composed of both compromise and competition, changed by these policies largely from the 1860s to the 1910s.

### Indigenous Education

The Maharaja of Travancore as well as other Hindu kings in India patronized the education of Brahmins as 'a duty enjoined by the Dharma Shastras', and this patronage attracted a large number of Brahmins from the Tamil districts.<sup>1</sup> But until the 1830s, the Travancore government had almost no interest in the education of ordinary people. Education was usually given to

---

<sup>1</sup> Nagam Aiya, The Travancore State Manual (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1906), vol.II, pp.444-5.



these people by asans, village schoolmasters, in indigenous schools normally called 'pial' schools. The asans belonged to various castes including the Ambalavasi, Sudra (or Nayar) and Izhava. These teachers depended on support from the parents which was paid mostly in kind. As to the education of girls, the Census Report of 1891 stated that 'Female education in this part of the peninsula is of ancient origin ... No Travancore girl is permitted to grow up to womanhood without a fair knowledge of reading and writing'.<sup>2</sup> However, although girls were educated together with boys in the indigenous schools, the number seems not to have been large. In most of these schools, according to a book written in 1871 by Samuel Mateer of the LMS, there were 'from 20 to 30 or more boys', and 'from 2 to 4 or 5 Sudra and Ilavar girls'.<sup>3</sup>

Not surprisingly, the Travancore state regarded these schools as inferior institutions, especially after the 1860s, when it started to establish a number of government vernacular schools. In 1889-90, for example, the Administration Report stated that 'They cannot by any means be regarded as valuable instruments for the regeneration of the masses'.<sup>4</sup> However, as will be seen later, a large number of indigenous schools survived until the early twentieth century, and the state increasingly came to be concerned about how these schools

---

<sup>2</sup> Report of the Census of Travancore for 1891, Vol.I, Report (Madras: Addison, 1894), pp.484-485.

<sup>3</sup> Samuel Mateer, The Land of Charity: A Descriptive Account of Travancore and its People (London: John Snow, 1871), p.154.

<sup>4</sup> TAR, 1889-90, p.149.

could be upgraded.

### The First Half of the Nineteenth Century

Until the 1860s, missionary institutions dominated in the area of Western education in Travancore. In 1865-66, for example, the government schools had only 1,067 pupils, while the LMS had 8,081 and the CMS 2,209.<sup>5</sup> Moreover, the missionaries had a strong influence even on the government institutions. The case of the Raja's Free School was one example. The establishment of this school at Trivandrum was the first attempt by the Travancore government to introduce Western-style education. The Raja, after visiting the Nagercoil Seminary of the LMS, invited John Roberts, the Headmaster of the Seminary, to start an English school at the state capital. This was at first a 'private school', though the fees of the students were paid by the government. But this school was soon taken over by the Travancore government and was established as the Raja's Free School in December 1836. Roberts worked as Headmaster until he retired in 1855. The number of the students rose above 500 in 1864. In 1866, it was divided into the Junior and Senior Department, and the Senior Department became a college. V. Nagam Aiya, one of the most influential government officials in the Travancore government, was the first graduate from this college.<sup>6</sup>

---

<sup>5</sup> TAR, 1865-66, p.59. In addition, Catholics and Syrians had 5,917 pupils in 1865-66.

<sup>6</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, pp.447-8.

Roberts was a non-commissioned officer of the Artillery at Quilon. He then became a teacher of the CMS School at Alleppey and after that Headmaster of the Nagercoil Seminary. Thus, he was not a missionary. But he was certainly interested in the diffusion of Christianity. He requested the Raja to give permission for Bible education by the Christian teachers in the School.<sup>7</sup> His request was accepted, and this practice continued at least until about the turn of the century. In 1908 I.H. Hacker of the LMS stated that Scripture teaching in the government schools was carried on 'until quite recent years'.<sup>8</sup> In other words, the Travancore state continued to allow the students, many of whom would become government officials, to learn about Christianity in that school. Along with this central institution, the Travancore government opened several District English Schools. Roberts also supervised these schools. But from 1855, the District Schools were looked after by Charles Mead, a former LMS missionary. He was appointed Superintendent of Education in that year and made efforts to revive some of the District Schools.<sup>9</sup>

The Travancore government thus started several schools to give English education to its people in the first half of the nineteenth century. But this was conducted under the strong influence of, and with the direct help of, the missionaries.

---

<sup>7</sup> C.M. Agur, Church History of Travancore (1903, reprinted New Delhi: Asian Educational Service, 1990), p.725; Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.155.

<sup>8</sup> I.H. Hacker, A Hundred Years in Travancore (London: H.R. Allenson, 1908), p.39.

<sup>9</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.452.

In addition, as we have seen, the number of government institutions was still small before the 1860s. Moreover, the quality of these schools seems not to have been very high. Regarding S. Shugarasubbier, only Dewan who graduated from the Raja's Free School, the highest institution at that time, Nagam Aiya stated in the State Manual that Shungarasubbier was 'of poor educational attainments' as the Free School 'did not then afford any higher'.<sup>10</sup> As a result, the state had to rely on the mission schools to a large extent. In fact, the missionary institutions produced a number of the government officials including two Dewans, as will be seen next.

#### Educational Institutions of the LMS

The education system of the LMS was principally composed of three main parts - the Seminary at Nagercoil as the highest institution, the boarding schools and Anglo-Vernacular schools as secondary schools, and the village schools as primary schools. In 1866, for example, the number of pupils at each of the LMS institutions was as follows:

---

<sup>10</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.I, p.638.

TABLE 1: Educational Institutions of the LMS

Institutions	Boys	Girls	Total
Nagercoil Seminary	147	-	147
Boarding Schools	64	200	264
Anglo-Vernacular Day Schools	352	-	352
Village Schools	5,425	1,290	6,715
Night Schools	358	17	375
Total	6,346	1,507	7,853

Source: TDC Annual Report for 1866.

The Nagercoil Seminary was established in 1818. It was the first institution to give regular English education in Travancore. Also, until the Maharaja's College was established, it was 'the head of educational institutions in South and Central Travancore'.<sup>11</sup> English, Tamil, Malayalam and Sanskrit were taught in this institution. The prime object of the Seminary was 'training Native Agents for the Mission'.<sup>12</sup> In Travancore, as elsewhere, European missionaries were aided by numerous native agents. In 1868, eight European missionaries worked in Travancore, while there were eleven ordained Native Ministers, 244 Evangelists and Catechists, and 217 Schoolmasters.<sup>13</sup> Many of the catechists were graduates of the Nagercoil Seminary.

However, this institution also accepted Hindu students. In 1860 there were 63 boarders and 50 day students in the Seminary, and, among the 50 day students, 19 were 'Heathens'

---

<sup>11</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.446.

<sup>12</sup> Duthie to Mullens, 1 Sep. 1868, TL, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>13</sup> Duthie to Mullens, 1 Sep. 1868, TL, Box 7, CWMA; LMS Annual Report for 1868, pp.73-8.

or Hindus.<sup>14</sup> The English education given at the Seminary was certainly the largest factor which attracted Hindu students who intended to become government officers. J. D. Whitehouse, an LMS missionary, wrote that 'Many of the heathen students ... had obtained government employment in the Medical, Engineering and other Departments'.<sup>15</sup> Among them, the most successful Hindu graduates were undoubtedly Nanoo Pillay and Rama Row, both of whom became Dewans of Travancore. Although they were high-caste Hindus and also Dewans of an orthodox Hindu state, they were 'loyal to the Seminary'. Nanoo Pillay (Dewan, 1877-1880) gave to the Seminary a sum of Rs.1,000 and Rama Row (Dewan, 1887-92) Rs.500. The interest on these donations was used to award prizes to students every year.<sup>16</sup> The Nagercoil Seminary was raised to a college in 1893 and became the Scott Christian College. It was named after the Director of the LMS who gave a generous gift to the college.<sup>17</sup>

'Next in importance to the Seminary' were the boarding schools for both sexes at each head station of the Mission.<sup>18</sup> In 1868, the LMS had five boarding schools for boys and six for girls. The number of boys was 68, and of girls 164. These

---

<sup>14</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1860, p.9.

<sup>15</sup> quoted in J.A. Jacob, A History of the London Missionary Society in South Travancore, 1806-1959 (Nagercoil: Diocesan Press, 1990), p.94.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid., p.94.

<sup>17</sup> Occasional Speeches Delivered by Dewan Bahadur M. Krishnan Nair, Dewan of Travancore, 1916-1920 (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1920), p.10.

<sup>18</sup> Duthie to Mullen, 1 Sep. 1868, TL, Box 7, CWMA.

pupils were selected from various congregations 'with a view to their future usefulness in the Mission as Catechists or the wives of Catechists and school teachers', and were trained as mission agents. They learned arithmetic, geography, Malayalam grammar, Malayalam poetry, Tamil, theology and the Bible. The girls were also taught sewing and embroidery.<sup>19</sup>

As for primary education, there were a large number of village schools. The LMS had 141 village schools for boys and 31 for girls in 1861. In these schools, Hindus and other communities as well as the LMS Christians were educated. In 1868, for example, of the total number of pupils, Protestants constituted 41.1 percent, while 5.9 percent were Roman Catholics and the remaining 53.0 percent were Hindus and from other communities.<sup>20</sup> Usually these schools opened and closed with prayer, and one hour between the regular hours was devoted to Scripture education.<sup>21</sup>

There is no doubt that the missionaries regarded their educational activities as an important means of proselytization. Regarding the effect of Bible education, G. O. Newport, an LMS missionary, wrote that:

The Heathen children at first stoutly refused to learn any Scripture Lessons like other children. They are however obliged to do so outwardly at least by the rules

---

<sup>19</sup> Duthie to Mullen, 1 Sep. 1868, TL, Box 7, CWMA; TDC Annual Report, 1867, p.12; Trivandrum 1866, TR, Box 1, CWMA.

<sup>20</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1868.

<sup>21</sup> Quilon 1899, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

of the school... Very soon, they became much interested in the lessons and now learn them with as much zest as the Christians themselves, and in some cases have even greater knowledge of the Christian religion than those who profess it.<sup>22</sup>

However, these proselytizing activities of the missionaries increasingly came to be criticized by the higher castes, and the Travancore government issued an order to prohibit religious education in school hours, as will be seen later. But this was as late as 1902. In other words, the state did not pay much attention to the religious education given in the mission schools until that time.

Besides these institutions, there were a number of Anglo-vernacular schools, established to train teachers and preachers. But a number of students also became 'clerks and conductors on coffee and tea estates'.<sup>23</sup> Moreover, many of the students were Hindus. One Anglo-vernacular school had 250 pupils, and most of them were Hindus.<sup>24</sup>

In addition to these schools, the LMS had the 'Pulayars' Charity School' established in Trivandrum in 1861. It was maintained partly by a grant of rice from the Travancore government and partly by the interest of the Endowment Fund invested largely by Dr. Waring, the former Durbar [Government]

---

<sup>22</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1866, Pareychaley District, p.15.

<sup>23</sup> Neyoor. 1900, TR, Box 7, CWMA; Nagercoil, 1901, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>24</sup> Pareychaley, 1906, TR, Box 8, CWMA.



Physician. The Pulaya students were trained to be mission agents, gardeners or domestic servants. Some were employed as government vaccinators in charge of their caste, and most clever pupils were sent to the Nagercoil Seminary for education in English with a view to their employment as teachers in the mission.<sup>25</sup>

### Educational Institutions of the CMS

The education system of the CMS was similar to the LMS. It had institutions for higher, secondary and primary education. In these institutions, as in the LMS's schools, a number of Hindu pupils also studied.

The first college connected with the CMS was established under the stimulus and direction of Col. John Munro, the British Resident.<sup>26</sup> It was called 'the Kottayam College or Old Seminary'. Although 'the better instruction of the Syrian priests' was the primary object of the college, it also functioned to produce a number of officials for the Travancore government, just as the Nagercoil Seminary of the LMS did.<sup>27</sup> The government itself welcomed the College as a place for general education and granted it a large amount in donations. In 1815, for example, Rani Lakshmi Bayi donated Rs.20,000.<sup>28</sup>

---

<sup>25</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1899, p.5; Ibid., 1873, pp.22-23; Jacob, A History of the LMS, p.178.

<sup>26</sup> W.S. Hunt, The Anglican Church in Travancore and Cochin, 1816-1916 (Kottayam, CMS Press, 1918), vol.II, p.75.

<sup>27</sup> Hunt, The Anglican Church, vol.II, pp.74-5.

<sup>28</sup> Ibid., p.85; Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, 447.

But due to the split between the CMS and the Syrian Church of 1837, the 'Old Seminary' became a possession of the Syrian Church. Thus, the CMS missionaries established a new college called the CMS College in Kottayam. Also in this College, the missionaries intended to give education to 'all classes and creeds alike'.<sup>29</sup> That was largely because acquiring the higher castes by using higher education was one of their strategies. One CMS missionary wrote in 1899 that 'Higher education is one of the best means of making Christianity reach the High Castes'.<sup>30</sup>

As an institution for secondary education, the CMS created 'the Grammar School' at Kottayam. In this school, English, Malayalam and Sanskrit were taught to the pupils, most of whom were Syrians and Nayars. In 1838, it was renamed the CMS College High School. In addition to this school, the CMS established the Seminaries at Alleppey, Cochin and Trichur to give secondary education. Other high schools were built also at Mavelikara, Mallapally, Trichur and other places.<sup>31</sup> The CMS's schools for primary education were called the Parochial Schools or Parish Schools. Although they were originally created for the Syrian children, the missionaries tried to attract non-Christians to these schools. They also opened 'Nayar Schools' in two places at the request from the

---

<sup>29</sup> Agur, Church History, pp.995-6.

<sup>30</sup> To the Sec. of the CMS, 17 Dec. 1898, Original Papers, 1899, CMSA.

<sup>31</sup> Hunt, The Anglican Church, vol.II, pp.73-4; Eapen, Church Missionary Society and Education in Kerala, pp.90-121.

community.<sup>32</sup>

### Madava Row's Efforts

Until the 1850s, then, missionary institutions dominated in the area of education. The Travancore government established several English schools, but the number was still small, and some even had to be closed. In addition, no efforts were made to establish vernacular schools. The government institutions were thus remarkably poor. As a result, the government considerably depended on the missionaries for the education of its officials and others. But the first substantial step made to change this situation was taken by Sir T. Madava Row (Dewan, 1858-1872). Madava Row paid much attention to education as well as many other spheres of the government. During his Dewanship and after, government expenditure on education increased considerably, as is shown in the table below.

---

<sup>32</sup> Hunt, The Anglican Church, p.70; Eapen, Church Missionary Society and Education in Kerala, p.65. The CMS missionaries were certainly more permissive regarding caste distinctions within Christians in Travancore, and they did not take any serious measures against these distinctions until the 1900s, as will be seen in Chapter 5. That was certainly because the missionaries intended to approach the higher castes who were not prepared to mingle with the lower castes. Therefore, the establishment of 'Nayar Schools' was their natural strategy.

TABLE 2: Expenditure of Education in Travancore, 1864-1878

year	expenditure on education (Rs.)	percentage of the gross expenditure of the government (%)
1864-65	57,039	1.4
1869-70	114,545	2.1
1874-75	148,248	2.8
1877-78	195,239	3.5

Source: Travancore Administration Reports for 1864-65, 1869-70, 1874-75 and 1877-78.

Largely due to this increased expenditure, the number of government schools rose rapidly. There was 'only His Highness's Free School at Trevandrum with a Branch School at Quilon' in 1859. But in 1867-68, the Travancore government had seven schools at Trivandrum as well as fifteen English and twenty vernacular schools in the districts.<sup>33</sup>

Meanwhile, Madava Row paid great attention to vernacular education. In 1866, the 'Central School' was established at Trivandrum, and a number of 'Talug Schools' were opened in each talug of Travancore. A vernacular normal school was also opened at Trivandrum in 1866 to train teachers for vernacular schools. The education in these vernacular schools was modelled on the system in English schools, and the textbooks used in these schools were translations from the English books. A Book Committee was created at that time to translate these books.<sup>34</sup> In addition to the District Schools, the

---

<sup>33</sup> H. Drury to Dewan, 30 Sep. 1859, No.1949, MPP, OIOC; TAR, 1867-68, p.42.

<sup>34</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.455. There were about thirty taluqs in Travancore.

Travancore government started to establish village schools in 1870. In 1871-72, the government had 141 village schools with 4,959 pupils, and, in 1881-82, 196 schools with 10,374 pupils.<sup>35</sup> English District schools also increased during Madava Row's Dewanship. From 1864 to 1868, the number of English schools increased from 7 to 15, and that of students from 373 to 1,231.<sup>36</sup>

These efforts regarding education were made largely for the purpose of reforming the government administration. As we have seen in Chapter 1, Dewan Madava Row and Maharaja Ayilliam Tirunal made great efforts to introduce reforms in almost every department of the government. In order to succeed in these efforts to transform Travancore into a 'modern state', the Travancore government needed officials who had received Western-style education. Madava Row publicized his view regarding his educational policy in 1866, stating that:

so far as the Sircar [state] was concerned, all important posts under it would be filled by educated men, and by educated men alone, as soon as they become available. Mere experience in an office had its value, but could not alone suffice for performing well the duties of Government in its several parts. An educated man of limited experience was more valuable than a man

---

<sup>35</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.456; TAR, 1871-72, 1881-82.

<sup>36</sup> TAR, 1867-68, p.45.

of lengthened experience but defective education.<sup>37</sup>

Meanwhile, the Madras government also urged the Travancore state to establish more educational institutions. In September 1859, H. Drury, the Assistant Resident, wrote to Madava Row that 'The first important object would be ... to establish district or talook schools at all the larger towns in North and South Travancore'.<sup>38</sup> The Madras government naturally appreciated the efforts of the Travancore government, stating that 'it is gratifying to learn that His Highness the Maharaja has it in contemplation to provide liberally for the development of Vernacular education in Travancore'.<sup>39</sup>

It is true that, as Robin Jeffrey has pointed out, the development of the government schools 'broke the missionary monopoly and any chance of high castes being forced to attend mission schools in large numbers'.<sup>40</sup> Indeed, R. H. Maddox, a CMS missionary, reported in 1872 that there were 'hardly 20 boys to be found' in his English school, though he had 100 or 150 boys in the previous year. As to the reason for this sharp decrease, he stated that:

the Sircar [state] has opened a great number of Vernacular Schools in different parts of the country, which are maintained in a state of thorough efficiency,

---

<sup>37</sup> TGG, vol.4, No.50, 25 Dec. 1866.

<sup>38</sup> Drury to Dewan, 30 Sep. 1859, No.1949, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>39</sup> G.O. No. 63, 26 Feb. 1872, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>40</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, p.82.

and boys find that they can become qualified for the lower grades of Sircar appointments ... very much more quickly and at much less trouble through this vernacular training than through English.<sup>41</sup>

However, despite the competition between the Travancore government and missionaries in the area of education, the relationship between them seems to have worked very well, and to have been mutually beneficial. The missionaries were largely appreciative of the Madava Row's reforms. J. Duthie, an LMS missionary who came to Travancore in 1859, wrote regarding Madava Row that 'He was a man of statesmanlike instincts, deeply impressed with the necessity of reforms ... He understood the work of the missionaries, and valued their relationship'.<sup>42</sup> Samuel Mateer, another LMS missionary, expressed his high appreciation for the development of education during Madava Row's Dewanship. That was at least partly because he thought that the development of Western education was, by enlightening the masses, favourable for the development of the mission as well. He stated in 1871 that:

Education is thus spreading in a remarkable degree in this interesting country, and must inevitably bring with it, by the blessing of God, the down fall of superstition, error, and oppression, and be the means of

---

<sup>41</sup> Madras Church Missionary Record, No.11, vol.34, Dec. 1872, p.347.

<sup>42</sup> LMS Chronicle, 1906, p.76.

introducing an era of national enlightenment, progress and freedom.<sup>43</sup>

In fact, Mateer enjoyed a good relationship with the Travancore government. He was at least twice appointed Secretary and Treasurer of the Trivandrum People's Library, where he selected new books to be purchased for the Library with other members of the managing Committee, most of whom were high-caste Hindus. In addition, Mateer organized several lectures. In 1865-66, seven lectures were given by the First Prince of Travancore, T. Madava Row and others as well as three missionaries.<sup>44</sup> Apparently, the Travancore government still needed the missionaries' help in its aim of 'modernization', and also it was impossible for the government alone to respond to the growing public demand. The Administration Report stated in 1866-67 that 'there is an immense and yet increasing demand for education'.<sup>45</sup> Under these circumstances, the missionaries and the government largely co-operated rather than competed.

The creation of the Girl's School by A. M. Blandford of the Church of England Zenana Missionary Society was one example of their co-operation. This School was almost exclusively for the education of high-caste girls. In 1879, it had 101 girls, of which the 'greater number' were Nayars; the others were

---

<sup>43</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.157.

<sup>44</sup> TGG, vol.6, No.6, 18 Feb. 1868; TGG, vol.17, No.44, 4 Nov. 1879.

<sup>45</sup> TAR, 1866-67, p.84.



mainly Tamil and Maratha Brahmins.<sup>46</sup> It was opened in 1864 at an old disused palace within the Fort, which contained the Sri Padmanabha Temple and was supposed to be the most sacred enclosure in Trivandrum. This school steadily developed and became one of the most influential centres of female education in the state. The first woman who passed the Matriculation Examination of the Madras University learned in this school. Not surprisingly, as a mission school, this school gave religious education as well. Bible classes were held daily, and prayer was offered 'at the close of morning and afternoon school'.<sup>47</sup>

Nevertheless, the Travancore state showed considerable interest in this school. That was at least partly because this school provided English education for girls, which was not easily obtained at that time. In the school, pupils were instructed in English by the lady missionary and her assistants, though some lessons were taught in Malayalam by a Brahmin. In 1879, the Travancore government had two other schools for girls. But, in them, English was not taught.<sup>48</sup> In any case, in addition to providing the site of the school in the Fort and a grant-in-aid, the Ranis of Travancore often presented books and prizes to the girls, and the Maharaja himself usually presided at the annual distribution of prizes. In particular, Sir T. Madava Row took a great interest in this

---

<sup>46</sup> The Missionary Conference: South India and Ceylon, 1879 (Madras: Addison, 1880), vol.1, p.173.

<sup>47</sup> The Missionary Conference, 1879, p.173.

<sup>48</sup> Ibid.

mission school. He not only sent his own daughter and niece to the school but also advised other Hindus to make use of this institution.<sup>49</sup>

Apart from educational institutions, the establishment of the government printing press was another example of the favourable relationship between the Travancore government and the missionaries. The first press in Travancore was the Nagercoil Mission Press of the LMS established in 1820 by Charles Mead, an LMS missionary. The CMS also created a press at Kottayam in 1822.<sup>50</sup> Meanwhile, the Government Press was started in the 1830s, certainly shortly after the brother of the Maharaja visited the Nagercoil Press in 1834. It was organized under a man called Samathanam Maistry, one of the workmen trained in the LMS's Nagercoil Press. In 1863, Charles Mead became Superintendent of the Press though he had already retired from the LMS due to his re-marriage to an Indian woman. Through his efforts, 'the stock of printing machine and types received considerable additions'. The Government Printing Press was established and developed with the help of the missionaries.<sup>51</sup>

---

<sup>49</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.476; Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record, Nov. 1906, vol.16, No.6, pp.97-98.

<sup>50</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.493; Jacob, A History of the LMS, p.65.

<sup>51</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.494; Agur, Church History, pp.900-3; Nagercoil, 1834, India Odds, Box 16, CWMA.

Curriculum and State Policy

As we have seen, educational opportunities for ordinary people were limited to the indigenous schools before the nineteenth century, and the state did not pay any attention to the indigenous schools. That was undoubtedly because education, except that for some Brahmins, had nothing to do with the building and maintaining of the state before 1800. According to Nagam Aiya, the curriculum of the indigenous schools was astronomy, lessons in casting horoscopes and compiling calendar, 'the chief percepts for daily conduct', known as 'Neethi sastra', the thousand names of Vishnu, a portion of the Sanskrit dictionary, a few verses on medicine, general poetry and the three R's.<sup>52</sup> Regarding the schools for indigenous education, Dewan T. Madava Row wrote that 'the education in them is based on a system which does not attempt the development of the mental powers beyond burdening the memory, and falls far short of the requirement of the present age'.<sup>53</sup> The Administration Report for 1889-90 also expressed a similar view, that 'The instruction thus imparted is entirely superficial and defective and ill-adapted towards improving the mind'.<sup>54</sup> Thus development of the 'mental powers' or 'improving the mind' was certainly one of the greatest concerns of the state. As we have seen, the state needed these qualities in order to introduce many reforms and

---

<sup>52</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.2, pp.453-4.

<sup>53</sup> TAR, 1865-66, p.57.

<sup>54</sup> TAR, 1889-90, p.150.

to change itself into a 'modern state'. But what kind of education was considered as appropriate for this purpose? The curriculum adopted at government schools might suggest an explanation for this. In the Central [Vernacular] School, the following subjects were taught in 1867-68:

The whole of a work on moral and social duties.  
 Treatise on health and how to preserve it.  
 Treatise on giving truthful evidence.  
 Arithmetic ...  
 Geometry ...  
 Geography of Europe, Asia and America - Duncan's Geography of India.  
 Lessons in Sanskrit<sup>55</sup>

Although 'history' did not appear in the above, it was certainly an important subject. This subject was, for example, adopted for the entrance examination of the Travancore Vernacular School. The subjects for the examination were as follows:

#### Written Examination

Language - Malayalam 3rd Book of Reading.  
 Arithmetic ...  
 History - Travancore.  
 Geography - Travancore and India.  
 Composition and Dictation ...  
 Hand-writing - Ability to write well on paper and cadjan [palm leaf].

#### Vica Voce Examination

Reading ...  
 Recitation - any passage from an easy Malayalam poetical work.  
 Sanskrit ...  
 Mental Arithmetic.<sup>56</sup>

---

<sup>55</sup> TAR, 1867-68, p.47.

<sup>56</sup> TGG, 1 July 1884, p.637.

As to the curriculum in the aided schools, the Travancore government suggested in 1875 that the following subjects should be taught:

Reading - Vignanamunjee, Principles of Morality, Truthful Evidence, Rules of Health and Lessons on Money Matters.  
 Writing - On paper and cadjan  
 History - History of Travancore  
 Arithmetic ...  
 Geography - Geography of Travancore and General Geography.<sup>57</sup>

Thus, apart from the three R's, the government seems to have tried to promote education on morality, rational thinking and health. The history and geography of Travancore and other places were also important subjects which it wanted to add to the curriculum. Though the government did not demand the teaching of Sanskrit in the aided schools, this language was taught in the government schools.

It is needless to say that the more detailed examination of the textbooks actually used would be necessary to answer the question in full. But the above curricula seem to suggest at least the following things: First of all, geographical knowledge of Travancore, India and the world was considered as essential, and this was undoubtedly seen to be necessary for the development of industry and commerce and for the 'enlightened' and reformed administration. Secondly, the education on morality, rationality and health could have been very helpful to a state trying to introduce numerous social

---

<sup>57</sup> TGG, 14 Sep. 1875, vol.13, No.37, p.844.

and administrative reforms. The teaching of the history of Travancore was undoubtedly a useful subject for the purpose of strengthening the legitimacy of the Travancore state by describing the origin and development of the state. Similarly, a knowledge of Sanskrit might have been considered to contribute to maintaining the Hindu tradition, which was considered one of the basic function of the state. In any case, at least it could be argued that the two main policies of the state had considerable influence upon the curriculum. One was to reinforce the basis of the Hindu state; the other to transform Travancore into a 'modern state'. If the state began to show more and more interest in education, it was at least partly because of these considerations.

### Female Education

Sir T. Madava Row also paid considerable attention to female education, partly because he considered the role of women an important factor in achieving his goal of 'modernization'. He stated in the Administration Report for 1862-63 that 'very little, if anything, has been done, for female education. This subjects calls for prompt attention, as such education must be, among other advantages, the foundation of important social reforms'.<sup>58</sup> Accordingly, the Travancore government established a few female schools in the 1860s. The first school was built at the cantonment in Trivandrum, and was

---

<sup>58</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.475.

supervised by European women.<sup>59</sup> However, compared to that for boys, the state clearly paid far less attention to the education for girls. Many teachers for girls' schools were male, and this prevented the girls from remaining in school beyond a certain age.<sup>60</sup> Although the state established a female normal school to improve this situation and to supply qualified female teachers to the increasing number of girls' schools, this was as late as 1887. Moreover, this school trained teachers only for vernacular schools. The 'English Training Branch' was not added until 1904.<sup>61</sup>

Compared with government institutions, mission schools for girls appear to have been better organized. The work among women was one of the most important branches of missionary activities, largely because they valued highly the influence of women, who were usually mothers and wives in their home. One LMS missionary wrote that 'In India, as elsewhere, the mother's influence in home is all-important'.<sup>62</sup> Apart from educational activities, the missionaries trained Christian women and send them to the houses of Hindus as 'Bible Women'. They also commenced lace and embroidery industries at Nagercoil, Neyyur and other places, which certainly attracted many women in Travancore. In 1921, the LMS at Nagercoil alone employed about 2,000 women for its lace industry. These women

---

<sup>59</sup> Ibid., vol.II, pp.475-6.

<sup>60</sup> TAR, 1886-87, p.131.

<sup>61</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.462.

<sup>62</sup> Trivandrum 1898, TR, Box 7, CWMA, emphasis in original.

made the lace in their homes and brought it once a week to the 'Lace Office' in Nagercoil. Most of the lace was sold to Europeans in India, but some was exported to South Africa, Australia and the Malay States. All the women were Christians connected with the LMS.<sup>63</sup>

The missionaries were thus the pioneers in the area of female education. The first girls' school in Travancore was a boarding school for girls established at Nagercoil in 1819 by Mrs. Mead, wife of an LMS missionary.<sup>64</sup> In 1867, the LMS had 6 boarding schools and 31 village schools for girls.<sup>65</sup> Missionary institutions for female education were numerous and influential. Nagam Aiya wrote in 1906 that 'From the several centres of missionary activity female education spread all around and there are, at present, a large number of Mission girls' schools distributed throughout the entire extent of the State',<sup>66</sup> and the state still had to depend on the mission schools for the education of high-caste as well as low-caste girls.

The Fort School established by A.M. Blandford of the Zenana Mission was one of the mission schools which accommodated a number of high-caste girls, as we have seen. The LMS and the CMS also established special schools for high-caste girls. In Nagercoil alone, they had as many as seven schools for non-Christian girls belonging to the high castes. Bible education

---

<sup>63</sup> Nagercoil, 1921, TR, Box 10, CWMA.

<sup>64</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.474.

<sup>65</sup> TDC Annual Report for 1867.

<sup>66</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.475.



was given in these schools, and examinations in Scripture were held three times a year. The LMS had three other 'high caste girls' schools' in Neyyur and a similar school in Kottar. The CMS also had at least four 'schools for Hindu girls' belonging to the Sudra and Brahmin castes.<sup>67</sup> Thus, the state relied heavily on the missionaries for the education of girls as well as that of the lower castes. It was not at least until the late nineteenth century that the state itself began to pay substantial attention to the female education.

#### Grant-in-Aid of 1875

Dewan T. Madava Row and his successors largely maintained a favourable relationship with the missionaries at least in the 1870s and the 1880s. That was mainly because they expected the missionaries to undertake the education of the lower castes, which the state was not ready to deal with. The introduction of the grant-in-aid system in 1875 was one example of their relationship in that period.

The Travancore government started to afford grants-in-aid in 1868-69 so as to encourage 'the educational efforts of the missionary societies'.<sup>68</sup> But the grants were given only to a small number of schools in Trivandrum. In 1875, however, the government decided to give a substantial amount of grants mainly to the missionaries. After that, the number of aided

---

<sup>67</sup> W.J. Richards, Twenty Years' CMS Work in Travancore and Cochin, 1858-78 (Kottayam: CMS Press, 1879), p.8.

<sup>68</sup> Report of the Education Expenditure Committee (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1921), p.64.

schools rapidly increased as is shown on the table below.

TABLE 3: Number of aided schools

year	number of aided schools
1870-71	18
1875-76	218
1880-81	453
1885-86	545
1890-91	1,225

Source: Travancore Administration Reports for 1870-71, 1875-76, 1880-81, 1885-86, 1890-91.

The commencement of the large-scale grant-in-aid system in 1875 was largely the result of demand from the missionaries. They, especially the LMS missionaries, suffered financially in the early 1870s, and that was the direct cause of the demand for state aid. As to their educational institutions, Samuel Mateer wrote in 1872 that 'This is the most unsatisfactory department of labour in which we are engaged, arising solely from the lack of funds for the maintenance of efficient educational institutions'.<sup>69</sup>

Under these circumstances, the missionaries at the same time demanded two matters from the Travancore government. One was the opening of the government schools to the lower castes, and the other was affording grants-in-aid to mission schools. As to the exclusion of the lower castes and Christians, the missionaries criticized the government severely in the early 1870s. Mateer wrote that it was 'a crying shame and serious

---

<sup>69</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1872, p.17.

blot upon the administration'.<sup>70</sup> The LMS missionaries then presented a petition to the Maharaja in 1873, appealing for opening of 'all the Government schools to all classes' and the creation of the grant-in-aid system.<sup>71</sup> As to the CMS missionaries, some of their schools also suffered from financial default. W. Johnson, a CMS missionary, complained about the lack of the grant-in-aid system in Travancore, while it existed in 'Tinnevelly and other places'. J. H. Bishop, a CMS missionary, also expressed his hope for the introduction of the grant-in-aid system.<sup>72</sup>

The Madras government strongly demanded the opening of the government schools in Travancore to the lower castes in the early 1870s after the assault on William Lee, an LMS missionary, discussed in Chapter 2. The Madras government was apparently determined to attack the caste disabilities in Travancore at that time. The Travancore government, however, was not prepared to open government schools to the lower castes. It had expressed its attitude a few years earlier, stating that:

if the state, in present circumstances, throw the schools open indiscriminately to all castes, the practical alternatives offered to the high caste are either that they should forgo the advantage of state

---

<sup>70</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1872, pp.10-1.

<sup>71</sup> Pareychalay, 1872 and 1873, TR, Box 1, CWMA.

<sup>72</sup> W. Johnson to Fenn, 6 Oct. 1870, Mission Book, M28, CMSA; J. H. Bishop to Chairman, 18 feb. 1875, Mission Book. M48, CMSA.

education or secure that advantage under serious violence to religious feelings. Both these alternatives are to be deprecated.<sup>73</sup>

Under these circumstances, the Maharaja and the Dewan adopted a policy of introducing a large-scale grant-in-aid system, which was probably the best possible option for the Travancore government. In May 1875, the Maharaja sanctioned an annual allotment of Rs. 15,000 for a grant-in-aid, and the government invited representatives of the missionary societies in Travancore to a conference 'with a view to consider and adopt rules for the distribution of the grants'.<sup>74</sup> Thus, in September 1875, 'Rules for Grants-in-aid' were published in the Government Gazette. The Rules laid down that 'one half of the actual salaries of the teaching staff' was to be given. The government also publicized some conditions of the grant. According to the Rules, the grant-in-aid was given only to schools with an average attendance of 25 pupils or more. The government also required that schools should attain the standard of government village schools, describing details regarding reading, writing, history, arithmetic and geography, as we have already noted.<sup>75</sup>

But these conditions were not difficult for the missionaries to attain. In fact, the missionaries obtained large sums of money as grants-in-aid and often expressed their

---

<sup>73</sup> TAR, 1866-67, p.82.

<sup>74</sup> W. Hay to Offg. Ch. Sec., 18 May 1875, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>75</sup> TGG, vol.13, No.37, 14 Sep. 1875.

gratitude to the Maharaja and the government. In 1880, one LMS missionary wrote in his annual report that 'It is encouraging to feel that His Highness the Maharajah takes such an interest in the education of the lower orders of his people'.<sup>76</sup> Also in 1880, Rev. Yesudian, a native missionary of the LMS, stated that 'The deep interest which the Government displays in the progress of every Missionary effort for the enlightenment and well being of the country, is another feature peculiar to the times'.<sup>77</sup> The Madras government also appreciated the commencement of this grant-in-aid system, describing it as a 'liberal and enlightened measure'.<sup>78</sup> Thus, this grant-in-aid seems to have satisfied almost all the parties concerned. It was not until the late nineteenth century that the higher castes and the state began to pay great attention to the mission schools and to their activities in diffusing Christianity among the lower castes.

In any case, as a result of this system, the roles of the missionaries and the government came to be defined more clearly. The missionaries took charge of the education of the lower castes and Christians, though they still educated a large number of higher castes. On the other hand, the Travancore state largely concentrated on the education of high-caste Hindus. The state at least admitted the situation, and the missionaries were certainly well satisfied with it.

---

<sup>76</sup> Neyoor 1880, TR Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>77</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1879, p.5.

<sup>78</sup> G.O. No.335, 3 June 1875, MPP, OIOC.

Grant-in-aid to the Indigenous Schools

From 1875, when the Travancore government introduced a substantial grant-in-aid system, it largely adopted a policy of increasing aided schools rather than establishing government schools. As a result, the number of aided schools increased rapidly, while that of the government schools remained almost unchanged, as is shown below.

TABLE 4: Number of Government Schools and Aided Schools

year	Government schools	aided schools
1875-76	227	218
1880-81	230	435
1885-86	226	645
1890-91	239	1,225
1893-94	280	1,410

Source: Travancore Administration Reports for 1875-76, 1880-81, 1885-86 and 1893-94.

There were numerous indigenous schools even in the late nineteenth century. In 1889-90, 31.7 percent of the pupils received their education in private schools run by Indians, almost all of which were certainly the indigenous or 'pial' schools.<sup>79</sup> Faced with so many surviving schools of this kind, what the state did was to try to make use of them rather than seek to abolish them. Dewan V. Ramiengar stated in October 1883 that 'There are hundreds of indigenous schools already existing which, under the grant-in-aid system, might perhaps be moulded to our purposes and gradually turned to useful

---

<sup>79</sup> TAR, 1889-90, p.151.

account'.<sup>80</sup>

Accordingly, in November 1883, Ramiengar publicized the policy, stating that 'all future expenditure should be directed rather to encouraging local efforts by aiding schools established by private agency than to opening of new Government schools'.<sup>81</sup> Along with the policy, the Travancore government established two normal schools at Trivandrum and Kottar near Nagercoil with a view to provide trained teachers for aided schools. The training was done in the vernaculars of Travancore, 'Malayalam in the north and Tamil in the south'.<sup>82</sup> The government also announced in 1884 that preference would be given to indigenous schoolmasters and their relatives in the selection of candidates for admission to the Travancore Vernacular Schools.<sup>83</sup> In addition, a Book Committee, which had been abolished a few years before, was revived to provide 'appropriate' books for the indigenous schools.<sup>84</sup> As a result, in 1889-90, printed books instead of manuscript ones were in common use in the majority of indigenous schools.<sup>85</sup>

This policy of affording grants-in-aid to indigenous schools continued in the 1880s, and the number of aided indigenous schools sharply increased. That is, the number of

---

<sup>80</sup> TAR, 1883-84, p.lxxvi.

<sup>81</sup> TGG Supplement, 13 Nov. 1883, p.1.

<sup>82</sup> TAR, 1883-84, p.lxxviii.

<sup>83</sup> TAR, 1884-85, p.114.

<sup>84</sup> TGG Supplement, op. cit., p.3.

<sup>85</sup> TAR, 1889-90, p.150.

'private aided schools' increased from 44 in 1882-83 to 644 in 1891-92, while that of mission aided schools increased only from 395 in 1882 to 605 in 1891-92.<sup>86</sup> The Nayers took most advantage of this policy. 41.8 percent of the pupils who learned in native aided schools were Nayers and other Sudras in 1891-92.<sup>87</sup> There can be no doubt then that a large number of Nayers came to be able to give 'better' education for their children in 'private aided schools' without sending them to the mission schools. In this sense, the measure certainly worked to reduce the influence of the missionaries.

#### Education Reforms of 1894

The favourable relationship between the missionaries and the Travancore state which had continued since T. Madava Row's reforms changed considerably in the 1890s. The state came to adopt a number of policies which were regarded as being hostile to the missionaries. The policy concerning the education reforms of 1894 was certainly one of them.

Like other education reforms in Travancore, the main purpose of the reforms of 1894 was to strengthen government control over education. For this purpose, the Travancore government reformed the administration system, improved the system of inspection, and extensively revised the grant-in-aid system. The most important reform concerning the administration was the unification of the two divisions

---

<sup>86</sup> TAR, 1882-83, 1891-92.

<sup>87</sup> TAR, 1891-92, Appendix.



regarding English and vernacular education. The government devised a comprehensive system so as to 'secure unity of aim and method throughout the whole organization'.<sup>88</sup> The Travancore government also reinforced the inspection system. Schools were placed under three Range Inspectors, each having four assistants and a few sub-assistants to help them, and the duties, responsibilities and powers of the Inspectors were defined. At the same time, a post of Educational Secretary was created. Dr. A. C. Mitchell, the Principal of the Maharaja's College, was appointed to the post, and he had 'a large hand' in framing the reforms of 1894.<sup>89</sup> However, the introduction of the Travancore Educational Rules was perhaps the most important among the serial reforms of 1894. Through these strict rules, the Travancore government attempted to control curricula, the qualification of teachers, the state of buildings, accommodation and the sanitation of aided schools.<sup>90</sup>

The government, on the other hand, made great efforts to increase the number of the government schools. As a result, Nagam Aiya wrote in 1906, 'there is no village of any consequence in the whole State whose educational requirements have not been or are not being supplied directly by Government'.<sup>91</sup> In addition, the Travancore government also

---

<sup>88</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, pp.457-8.

<sup>89</sup> P. Rajagopalachari, Note on the Administration of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914), pp.53-4.

<sup>90</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.458.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., pp.278,482.

started to build schools for the 'backward classes' just after the publication of the Education Rules, as will be seen shortly. Moreover, also in the area of female education, the government made new and unprecedented efforts. In some places, the government established girls' schools near the mission schools. As a result, many girls changed their schools as the parents preferred that 'their children should attend a school where there is no Bible teaching'.<sup>92</sup>

As a result of the strict rules, which were enforced from 11 December 1896, the number of aided schools declined abruptly. Although there were 1,265 aided schools in 1895-96, only 472 remained after one year. In other words, almost two-thirds of the former aided schools were deprived of grants-in-aid after the enforcement of the new rules.<sup>93</sup> The educational institutions of the missions were greatly affected by the changes in the Rules. T. W. Bach, an LMS missionary in charge of the Trivandrum Mission District, wrote in 1898 that 'several of our older schools had to be closed, and others [continued] entirely at Mission expense'.<sup>94</sup> A CMS missionary also wrote in 1897 that they were getting into financial difficulties owing to the operation of the new grant-in-aid code.<sup>95</sup>

Under these circumstances, the missionaries considered the educational reforms of 1894 as a substantial change of the

---

<sup>92</sup> Medical Mission, 1897, TR, Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>93</sup> TAR, 1896-97, p.164; TAR, 1895-96.

<sup>94</sup> Trivandrum, 1898, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>95</sup> Caley to Sell, 26 Jun. 1897, Original Papers, CMSA.

government attitude towards the missionaries. I. H. Hacker, an LMS missionary, wrote in 1900 that 'during the last decade the whole policy of Government has been changed'. He also stated that 'the leading officials in this new education Department ... made this change of policy a means of hindering Christian work'.<sup>96</sup> H. T. Wills, also an LMS missionary, wrote in 1896 that 'Dr. Mitchell, the head of the College and Educational Sec. to the Dewan, is determined apparently to oust the missionaries if he can from all educational work'.<sup>97</sup> In fact, there is no doubt that this grant-in-aid system became a useful device for the government to control the missionaries' proselytizing activities. W. J. Richards, a CMS missionary, wrote in 1899 that 'Wherever a school is aggressive on Hinduism, it is very difficult to get grant-in-aid'.<sup>98</sup> The consideration about the grant-in-aid thus certainly influenced the missionary activities.

Moreover, the Travancore government attempted to restrict religious education in aided schools, in the Education Rules of 1894. But, not surprisingly, the missionaries, both the LMS and the CMS, strongly opposed the clause, and the government finally withdrew it from the Rules.<sup>99</sup> The reason for this withdrawal is not clear, but, as we have seen in the previous chapter, the state had to deal with strong protests from the

---

<sup>96</sup> Neyoor, 1900, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>97</sup> Wills to Thompson, 14 Feb 1896, TL Box 17, CWMA.

<sup>98</sup> Letter from W.J. Richards, 7 Dec. 1899, in Extracts from the Annual Letters of the Missionaries for 1899 (London: Church Mission House, 1899), Part 17, p.608.

<sup>99</sup> Duthie to Thompson, 4 Oct. 1904, TL, Box 21, CWMA.

missionaries regarding the inheritance rights of converts to Christianity. This matter was becoming a very serious problem for the state, and it was also discussed by the British government. Therefore, the Travancore state at least at that moment needed to avoid giving the impression that the state was anti-Christian or anti-missionary. In other words, the problem of inheritance rights was undoubtedly considered much more serious and urgent than that of religious education in mission schools. In fact, shortly after both the Madras government and the Government of India finally decided not to interfere in the matter of inheritance in 1901,<sup>100</sup> the Travancore state began to adopt several anti-missionary policies including the restriction on religious education.

Thus, in 1902, rules were published prohibiting the use of other than approved readers and textbooks in all aided schools.<sup>101</sup> On 11 June 1904, an order was issued in which the government prohibited religious education during school hours, a requirement which the government had previously withdrawn from the Education Rules of 1894. The LMS and CMS missionaries again appealed against this order to the Dewan. The missionaries stated that in British India 'freedom remained unabridged' with respect to religious education.<sup>102</sup> But this order finally took effect, and it greatly restricted the

---

<sup>100</sup> From Secretary of State, 30 Mar. 1901, Foreign Dept. Notes, Intl., 25 May 1901, NAI.

<sup>101</sup> TAR, 1901-02, p.47; Travancore Almanac, 1904, pp.187-8.

<sup>102</sup> Duthie to Thompson, 4 Oct. 1904, TL, Box 21, CWMA.

missionary activities.<sup>103</sup>

However, the education reforms of 1894 were far from complete and had to be modified several times until a new Education Code was issued in 1909-10, and the strict rules were relaxed from time to time. As early as 1896-97, for example, rules relating to building and accommodation were relaxed, and also special allowance was made for schools for 'backward classes or in backward districts'. Thus, 'liberal aid was given to the schools for the depressed classes opened by private managers, mostly Missionaries'.<sup>104</sup>

Consequently, the policy concerning the Rules of 1894 was gradually lost sight of, and, as a result, 'not a single rule' issued in 1894 was still in operation in 1910.<sup>105</sup> This relaxation of the Rules was certainly welcomed by the missionaries. In fact, they could retrieve many of the grants-in-aid which they lost under the revised Rules, though it is also certain that they themselves made efforts to improve the standard of their schools. T. W. Bach, an LMS missionary in charge of the Trivandrum Mission District, wrote that 'we fully expect to recover our position in 1898'. Another LMS missionary also stated that '64 out of 69 village schools received grant-in-aid in 1902'.<sup>106</sup> Thus, the Education Reforms of 1894 were far from successful for the Travancore

---

<sup>103</sup> LMS Annual Report, 1911, p.110.

<sup>104</sup> Rajagopalachari, Note, pp.53-4; TAR, 1896-97, p.177.

<sup>105</sup> Rajagopalachari, Note, pp.53-54.

<sup>106</sup> Trivandrum, 1898, TR Box 7, CWMA; Nagercoil 1902, TR, Box 8, CWMA.

state. That was at least partly because the state still largely needed the help of the missionaries so as to cope with the growing demand for education particularly from the lower castes.

### Education of the Lower Castes, 1894-1909

The lower castes, such as the Izhavas, Pulayas and Parayas were excluded from government schools in almost all cases. In 1891-92, the Izhavas occupied only 2.1 percent of all the pupils in the government schools,<sup>107</sup> while their proportion to the total population was about 16 percent. There were almost no pupils from the Pulayas and Parayas in government schools.

However, this exclusion increasingly became a political matter as the Izhavas and other castes began to assert themselves especially from the 1890s onwards. In 1896, P. Palpu, one of the Izhava leaders, submitted a memorial to the Maharaja. In this petition, he referred to the exclusion of the Izhavas from the government schools. In 1903, the SNDP Yogam was created by Sri Narayana Guru and other Izhava leaders for the purpose of Izhavas' religious and social advancement.<sup>108</sup> The Pulayas also began to make their own efforts for their uplift. From the late nineteenth century, Ayyan Kali (1863-1941), who played a leading part in the

---

<sup>107</sup> TAR, 1891-92.

<sup>108</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.205-6, 210.

struggles of the Pulayas, challenged a number of caste disabilities such as exclusion from public roads and markets. Among them, exclusion from government schools was one of the largest issues.<sup>109</sup> Thus, the Administration Report for 1904-05 stated that 'Every class of people from the highest Brahmin to the lowest Pulaya exhibits real interest in, and yearning for, the education of the children of their particular community'.<sup>110</sup>

Under these circumstances, the Travancore government began its efforts to provide more education for the lower castes. In 1895-96, 15 schools were established for the 'backward classes' by the government. That is to say, 4 for Muslims, 7 for Izhavas, 2 for Pulayas, 1 for Marakkans, and 1 for Kanis. In the next year, 15 more schools were established for them.<sup>111</sup> In 1895, the Travancore government also decided to grant scholarships to the 'poor and backward classes' with a view to providing teachers for schools among them.<sup>112</sup>

Moreover, the Travancore government also gradually threw its schools open to the lower castes, especially to the Izhavas. By the 1900s, most of the government schools, except those situated near the temples or palaces, were thrown open to the Izhava boys. As a result, Izhavas' efforts came to be concentrated on the admission of their girls to the government

---

<sup>109</sup> K. Saradamoni, Emergence of a Slave Caste: Pulayas of Kerala (New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1980), pp.146-9.

<sup>110</sup> TAR, 1904-05, p.60.

<sup>111</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.482.

<sup>112</sup> TGG, 6 Aug. 1895, Vol.33, No.32.

schools. In 1908, Kumaran Asan, one of the Izhava leaders, urged the government to open its schools to their girls.<sup>113</sup> Replying to his demand, Dewan P. Rajagopalachari stated in 1908 that:

His Highness's Government are not prepared to force matters in that direction. They hope that time would so far have changed that it would be possible for Brahmin, Nair and Ezhava girls to sit together in all rural places, as the boys of those communities are now doing.<sup>114</sup>

Although the Travancore government compromised with the Izhavas by admitting their boys, it thus denied the admission of their girls. In other words, caste prejudice was more persistent in the case of education for girls than that for boys, though the reason for this difference is not clear. Also, the government still almost completely denied the admission of the children of the Pulayas and Parayas, who were much lower than the Izhavas in the caste system in Travancore, at least until about 1909.

Though the government made efforts to give education to the lower castes, it still had to rely on the missionaries in order to cope with the growing demand mainly from the lower castes. As we have seen, it was difficult to open government schools to the 'polluted castes', which could cause serious

---

<sup>113</sup> SMPAP, 5th meeting, 1908, p.73.

<sup>114</sup> Ibid.



opposition from the higher castes. Also, the government was not be able to establish enough special schools for the 'backward classes'. In fact, there were 276 schools for the 'backward classes' with 5,907 pupils in 1907, and only 20 of these schools were under the direct management of the Travancore government.<sup>115</sup>

From these considerations, the Travancore government relaxed the strict educational rules issued in 1894 and began to give a large amount of grants to the missionaries again, as we have seen. In addition, it declared the free education for the 'backward classes'. In 1904, ten years after the publication of the Education Rules, the Travancore government held a conference, in which 'all denominations and interests were duly represented'. The government announced in this conference that 'the grant to certain Vernacular schools was reduced from three-fourth to one half of the teachers' salaries'. But, at the same time, it declared that it undertook to meet the entire cost of the primary education of the 'backward classes' and allotted about Rs.17,000 on this account. The government also added that 'caste should remain unaffected by change of religion'. Thus, this benefit was afforded to the Christian converts from the 'depressed classes' as well. The missionaries who had a large number of schools for the 'backward classes' certainly took advantage of this policy.<sup>116</sup>

However, especially from the 1900s, a number of high-caste

---

<sup>115</sup> SMPAP, 3rd Meeting, 1907, p.111.

<sup>116</sup> SMPAP, 1905, p.37; Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.483.

Hindus came to complain openly about the education by the missionaries. In 1905, a Nayar headmaster of a high school in Trivandrum stated in the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly regarding the grant-in-aid schools run by the missionaries that 'Pulayas and others could not derive the benefits of instruction in those schools without sacrificing their religion'. He then urged the Travancore government to 'open more schools for the backward classes'.<sup>117</sup> Another Nayar representative also stated in the Popular Assembly that 'a large number of schools were under the management of the missionaries and it was noteworthy that they turned their attention more to conversion than to education'.<sup>118</sup> The Dewan replied to this appeal, stating that 'Education cannot be unsound simply because it is given by missionaries'.<sup>119</sup> But, there can be no doubt that the Travancore state responded at least partly to these views of the high-caste Hindus when it adopted the policy of throwing open its schools to all classes in 1909-10 by the Education Code.

#### Education Code of 1909-10

The Education Code introduced in the year 1909-10 was 'a comprehensive measure which superseded all previous rules regarding education'. It defined more clearly the conditions of grants-in-aid; reclassified the schools into elementary and

---

<sup>117</sup> SMPAP, 2nd Meeting, 1905, p.84.

<sup>118</sup> SMPAP, 3rd Meeting, 1907, p.111.

<sup>119</sup> Ibid.

secondary; introduced a system of licensing of teachers; modernized the curriculum; and introduced the School Leaving Certificate.<sup>120</sup>

But one of the most distinctive features in the Code was that the Travancore government recognized the principle of throwing open its schools to all classes 'without distinction of caste and creed'.<sup>121</sup> Dewan P. Rajagopalachari confirmed the policy in the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly in 1912, stating that 'All schools which have been thrown open to Elavas are also now open to Pulayas'.<sup>122</sup> But, despite the declaration of the government, many government schools were still closed to the Pulayas and others. In 1902, only seven schools admitted Pulaya children. But, in 1916-17, 292 elementary schools for boys admitted Pulaya and Paraya pupils for the first time.<sup>123</sup> As the table below shows, the number of Pulayas and Parayas rapidly increased in the 1910s, which was the result of the new government policy.

---

<sup>120</sup> Rajagopalachari, Note, pp.54-5.

<sup>121</sup> Ibid.

<sup>122</sup> SMPAP, 8th Meeting, 1912, p.82.

<sup>123</sup> TAR, 1916-17, p.66.

TABLE 5: Number of Pulaya and Paraya Pupils

year	Pulayas	Parayas
1910-11	1,589	1,122
1912-13	1,191	1,290
1914-15	4,256	1,816
1916-17	10,913	4,955
1918-19	13,204	4,971
1920-21	12,381	5,135

Source: Travancore Administration Reports 1910-11, 1912-13, 1914-15, 1916-17, 1918-19 and 1920-21.

Another important feature of the Education Code was similar to the Education Rules of 1894. The government attempted to strengthen its control over education by establishing new government schools and also by imposing strict rules on private schools including mission schools. But what was different from the previous reforms was the introduction of the system of recognition. This system was introduced so as to control unaided schools, many of which were indigenous schools. In this system, unaided schools were divided into recognized and unrecognized schools. The unrecognized schools were deprived of the right of sending up candidates for the public examinations, and also stringent rules were made, prohibiting admission of pupils from the unrecognized to the recognized schools.<sup>124</sup> However, despite the government's efforts, a large number of unrecognized schools survived. The reason for this was that 'these schools were supplying a real need in the country'.<sup>125</sup> But, nevertheless, these schools

---

<sup>124</sup> Report of the Education Expenditure Committee, 1921, p.11.

<sup>125</sup> Ibid.

were gradually being extinguished. In 1910-11, there were 1,491 unrecognized schools in Travancore. But the number became 933 in 1920-21 and 376 in 1926-27.<sup>126</sup>

As to aided schools, the number of these decreased sharply immediately after the enforcement of the Code. In 1908-09, there were 1,330 aided schools in Travancore, but the number became 805 in 1910-11. However, although the mission schools were certainly affected by the Code, the missionaries seem to have been calm towards the Code and to have largely succeeded in improving their schools along with the requirements of the Code. Moreover, they appreciated the Code as an 'healthy incentive'. W. S. Hunt, a CMS missionary wrote about the Code that:

Though this involved a great expenditure of money for the provision of teachers, buildings and apparatus to satisfy the conditions of the Education Code and to retain Government grants, it proved a healthy incentive, and provided a more efficient education for the low-caste children.<sup>127</sup>

A. T. Foster, an LMS missionary, also wrote that they succeeded in their efforts to a large extent to cope with the requirements of the government. He then stated that the changes brought by the Code was 'salutary' and that there was

---

<sup>126</sup> TAR, 1910-11, 1920-21, 1926-27.

<sup>127</sup> Hunt, The Anglican Church, vol.II, p.236.

'a marked change for the better'.<sup>128</sup> Thus, the missionaries adopted positive attitudes towards the Code, and that was at least partly because they themselves recognized the necessity for reforms. In 1906, an LMS missionary wrote that 'The standard of the Schools throughout is low, few being higher than the Second Class and the amount they learn is barely enough for even reading the Gospels'.<sup>129</sup>

Thus, the relationship between the Travancore state and the missionaries seems not to have deteriorated after the enforcement of the Code. In this respect, the situation was very different from that in the 1890s. However, it could also be true that government control over education was more and more strengthened by throwing open its schools to the lower castes and other measures and that the missionary influence decreased after the introduction of the Code.

### Conclusion

Until the nineteenth century, the Travancore state, like many other 'pre-modern' states, did not consider that education was one of the functions of the state. The offices of the government were largely hereditary, and education given in the indigenous schools was regarded as being sufficient for the government officials as well as for ordinary people. Perhaps the first official statement of the state regarding education was made by Rani Gouri Parvati Bayi in 1817. She declared that

---

<sup>128</sup> LMS Annual Report, 1912, p.172.

<sup>129</sup> Nagercoil, 1906, TR, Box 8.

'the State should defray the entire cost of the education of its people'.<sup>130</sup> But, despite this statement, the state did not establish its own schools until the 1830s. Moreover, the quality of these government schools was not very high. The state thus greatly depended on the missionaries in the area of education. Many officials were educated at the mission schools.

Dewan Sir T. Madava Row recognized the importance of Western education and greatly changed this situation. So as to supply higher officials for the government service, he, for example, upgraded the Raja's High School into a college in 1866. For the purpose of training subordinate officials, a large number of vernacular schools were established. At that time, however, the state was not prepared for the education of the lower castes, and their education was almost completely left to the missionaries. Similarly, a great portion of female education was also conducted by them. The educational roles of the state and the missionaries were thus roughly defined after the 1860s. The state generally provided education for the male members of higher castes, and the missionaries for the lower castes and women. Both the state and the missionaries were, in the short term, more or less satisfied with this situation. The grant-in-aid of 1875 was one example of their strained but generally favourable relationship at that time.

Meanwhile, in the 1890s, the Travancore state began to recognize the importance of the education of the lower castes,

---

<sup>130</sup> TAR, 1928-29, p.192.

mainly due to demands from two directions. One was from the lower castes themselves who wanted the government schools to be thrown open to them. The other came, as we shall see in Chapter 5 in more detail, from the higher castes who were increasingly concerned about the growing influence of the missionaries and the increasing number of converts from the lower castes. Accordingly, the Travancore government adopted policies such as establishing special schools for the lower castes and throwing open some schools to certain low castes. But these efforts were not very successful, and the state still depended on the missionaries, largely because it had to cope with growing demands in the area of education. Thus, the state continued to provide a large quantity of grants for the mission schools. As to the missionaries, it was impossible for them to continue their educational activities successfully without grants-in-aid from the state. Moreover, as the Madras government increasingly came to avoid intervening in social and religious matters in Travancore, as we have seen in Chapter 2, it became increasingly difficult for the missionaries to confront with the Travancore government. Accordingly, they largely complied with the requirements of the government regarding, for example, the qualification of teachers, religious education and textbooks. Thus, their relationship built on compromise and competition largely continued at least until the 1930s.

Travancore attained remarkably high literacy rates in India. In 1931, 28.9 percent of the population were literate



in Travancore, compared to 9.5 percent in India.<sup>131</sup> The reasons for this attainment have not yet been adequately explained. P.K. Michael Tharakan has suggested the importance of public demand for education which was aroused mainly by 'the commercialization of agriculture and of the economy'.<sup>132</sup> Robin Jeffrey, paying attention to the matrilineal aspect of the society, has argued that 'Kerala's culture gave women a remarkable independence, and women have made Kerala remarkably literate'.<sup>133</sup> However, it seems unquestionable that the missionaries also greatly contributed to the development of education in Travancore. But, this was not only because, as is often said, the missionaries were the pioneers of Western education and established a large number of schools, but also because the educational policies of the Travancore government were frequently formed through the competition and compromise, in other words, through their strained relations with the missionaries.

---

<sup>131</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932), p.297.

<sup>132</sup> P.K. Michael Tharakan, 'Socio-Economic Factors in Educational Development: Case of Nineteenth Century Travancore', Economic and Political Weekly, 19, 45, 10th Nov. 1984, p.1964.

<sup>133</sup> Robin Jeffrey, 'Governments and Culture: How Women Made Kerala Literate', Pacific Affairs, 60,3, Fall 1987, p.451.

## CHAPTER 4

## MEDICINE: THE 'CHARITABLE STATE' AND THE MISSIONARIES

Introduction

Medicine played a major role in missionary work in Travancore, and in the informal partnership between the missionaries and the state. Both shared a view of Western medicine as a 'charity' for the people. From their Hindu perspective, as well as their 'modernizing stance', the Maharajas and the Travancore government had an idea of a 'charitable state', and made great efforts to introduce Western medicine. In this, the missionaries were seen to be valuable allies rather than competing adversaries.

However, the missionaries clearly had practical objects of their own in providing medicine for the people. One of the most important purposes of their medical activities was to establish contact with the higher castes and to seek to convert them. The missionaries used the opportunities which their medical activities provided as fully as possible. In this sense, medical missions could have been a great threat to the Travancore state, which clearly identified itself as a Hindu state. In actuality, however, the missionaries and the state developed a mutually favourable relationship in the area of medicine, one that was much more favourable than in the

area of education. Thus, one of the main purposes of this chapter is to investigate how the state and the missionaries maintained their relationship in the area of medicine.

Compared to the Madras Presidency, the Travancore state seems to have paid greater attention to the health of its people from an earlier time. In British India, the primary concern for the medical administration was to secure the health of 'the colonizers, not the colonized' for a variety of reasons at least until the late nineteenth century.<sup>1</sup> However, in Travancore, the Maharaja's attention was directed largely to his own people and not to a white minority, and the ruler himself responded positively to Western medicine. At least partly for these reasons, Travancore generally had better medical facilities than other parts of India. In addition, in the area of indigenous medicine, this state showed much more positive attitude than the British authorities. And this positive attitude of the Travancore government towards medicine, whether Western or indigenous, seems to be one of the principal factors which have contributed to the formation of the higher standard of health in today's Kerala. As is well-known, Kerala has shown a much lower infant mortality rate and much longer life expectancy than other parts of India.<sup>2</sup> In fact, Kerala today has better

---

<sup>1</sup> David Arnold, 'Touching the Body: Perspectives on the Indian Plague, 1896-1900', Ranajit Guha (ed.), Subaltern Studies V: Writings on South Asian History and Society (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1987), p.58.

<sup>2</sup> Robin Jeffrey, Politics, Women and Well-Being: How Kerala became 'a Model' (London: Macmillan, 1992), p.186.

facilities than other parts of India. In 1981 Kerala had 125 beds per 100,000 compared to the all-India average of only 70. Also in that year, Kerala had 46 doctors and 3.5 hospitals per 100,000 persons compared with India's 39 doctors and one hospital.<sup>3</sup> While not directly concerned with the reasons for the exceptional performance of Kerala on the health front in recent decades, it is clear from this thesis that part of the explanation lies in the commitment of the Travancore state in the nineteenth and early twentieth centuries. In part, therefore, this chapter seeks to examine the background to government medical policy in Travancore and the reasons for its difference from other parts of India.

### Government Institutions

Unlike education, government institutions dominated medical activities in Travancore from the beginning. In the year 1870-71, for example, government institutions treated more than five times as many patients as the LMS institutions. In addition, the number of patients treated in the government institutions increased far more rapidly than that in the LMS institutions, as Table 6 indicates.

---

<sup>3</sup> Richard W. Franke and Barbara H. Chasin, Kerala: Development through Radical Reform (New Delhi: Promilla, 1992), p.43.

TABLE 6: Number of Patients Treated in the Government and LMS Institutions

---

year*	government institutions	LMS institutions
1870-71	66,757	12,046
1880-81	92,419	n/a
1890-91	120,883	n/a
1900-91	438,433	66,996
1910-11	543,345	113,203
1920-21	940,170	118,144
1930-31	1,975,328	145,532

---

Source: Travancore Administration Report for 1870-71, 1880-81, 1890-91, 1900-01, 1910-11, 1920-21 and 1930-31; South Travancore Medical Mission Annual Report for 1937 in Travancore Report, CWMA. \*The year shown here is a Malayalam year which begins in August every year. The figures for the LMS institutions are for 1871, 1881, 1891, 1901, 1911, 1921 and 1931 respectively.

It is true that there were several institutions run by Christian bodies apart from the LMS institutions. The CMS started a Leper Asylum in 1871; Roman Catholics had a hospital and dispensary at a place called Manjummel; the Church of England Zenana Mission had a dispensary at Trivandrum; and the Salvation Army started medical activities from the late nineteenth century.<sup>4</sup> But, the number of the patients treated at these Christian institutions was very small compared with the government institutions. As is shown on Table 7, the number of patients treated in the aided Christian institutions in 1896-97 was 22,055, while the government institutions treated 333,199 patients in the same year.<sup>5</sup>

---

<sup>4</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, p.545.

<sup>5</sup> Although the number of patients treated in the unaided Christian medical institutions, such as dispensaries of the LMS, is not shown on this table, the government institutions were certainly dominant if the number is added. In addition,

TABLE 7: Number of Patients Treated in the Aided Christian Institutions in 1896-97.

Name of institution	Number of patients
LMS Hospital, Neyyur	8,659
Roman Catholic Archbishop's Hospital	10,818
CMS Leper Asylum, Alleppy	24
Zenana Mission Dispensary	2,554
Total	22,055

Source: Travancore Administration Report for 1896-97, p.161.

Therefore, there can be no doubt that the missionaries' influence in the area of medicine was much less than that in the area of education. As we have seen in the previous chapter, the missionaries had great influence in the area of education. In 1885-86, for example, 18,802 pupils studied in the aided mission schools, compared to 13,501 in the government schools.<sup>6</sup>

The European system of medical aid was first introduced in Travancore in 1811. Although it was at first confined to the members of the ruling family and government officials, it was subsequently extended to the prisoners and then the general public. A Darbar [government] physician was appointed, and the government institutions developed under his supervision.<sup>7</sup> Thus, in 1863-64, there were nine government medical

---

the CMS, the most influential missionary body in central and north Travancore, did not have substantial medical missions as will be seen later. Apart from the Christian institutions, planters had several hospitals and dispensaries. TAR 1896-97, p.161.

<sup>6</sup> TAR, 1885-86.

<sup>7</sup> TAR, 1930-31, p.170.

institutions in Travancore, including the Charity Hospital at Trivandrum and the hospitals at Nagercoil, Shencottah, Quilon and Alleppy.<sup>8</sup>

A European medical officer called the Darbar Physician was, as noted, in charge of the Medical Department. Under him, there were many Indian medical officers, such as Surgeons, Assistant Surgeons, Apothecaries, Assistant Apothecaries and Hospital Assistants.<sup>9</sup> A substantial majority of these government medical officers were Syrian Christians. In 1908, out of 87 officers of all grades in the Medical Department, '53 were Christians, 23 were Sudras, 8 were Brahmins, 2 were Mahomedans and one was Ezhava'.<sup>10</sup> The Travancore government, at least in part, contributed to the making of this situation. A Christian called Mathew John studied in the Madras Medical College for seven years at the expense of the Travancore government. He was posted at a government medical institution in Quilon in 1872 after finishing his training.<sup>11</sup>

The government institutions continued to develop. The General Hospital was opened in Trivandrum in 1865; a medical school was started in 1869; and an asylum for insane people was first opened in 1878. Also in 1887, at a relatively early stage in the development of the women's medical movements in India, the Victoria Medical School and Hospital for Women was

---

<sup>8</sup> TAR, 1863-64, p.24.

<sup>9</sup> Travancore Almanac, 1904, pp.73-87.

<sup>10</sup> SMPAP, 6th Session, 5 Jan. 1910, p.33.

<sup>11</sup> Dewan to Resident, 25 Oct. 1872, in G.O. No.408, 15 Nov. 1872, OIOC.

created for the purpose of training midwives and nurses.<sup>12</sup> As a result of these state-directed efforts, medical relief in Travancore progressed more rapidly than in the Madras Presidency. Nagam Aiya stated that Travancore had 56 medical institutions including 12 aided ones in 1904, which means one for every 125 square miles and 52,715 of the population, while there was one medical institution for every 224 square miles and every 60,510 inhabitants in the Madras Presidency.<sup>13</sup> Also, by 1897, Travancore had 34 beds per 100,000 of the population, while neighbouring Malabar District had only 14 beds.<sup>14</sup>

The Travancore state also made a considerable effort to diffuse vaccination against smallpox. It issued a proclamation on 14 August 1878 which ordered every public servant and student in the government and aided schools to be vaccinated. In addition, the state tried to promote vaccination by setting the example of the ruling family before its people. In 1888-89, animal lymph was for the first time manufactured in the State, and in 1890-91 the Vaccine Depot was opened in

---

<sup>12</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, pp.538-9. It was in 1885 that the British colonial authorities began to provide medical instruction for women as doctors, hospital assistants, nurses, and midwives in India: David Arnold, Colonizing the Body: State Medicine and Epidemic Disease in Nineteenth-Century India (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1993), pp.262-3.

<sup>13</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual., p.536.

<sup>14</sup> M. Kabir and T.N. Krishnan, 'Social Intermediation and Health Transition: Lessons from Kerala', Paper for Workshop on Health and Development in India held in New Delhi on 2-4 January 1992, p.20.



Trivandrum.<sup>15</sup> The State also paid attention to the vaccination of the lowest castes from an early stage. In 1866-67, about 2,000 Pulayas were vaccinated.<sup>16</sup> A female vaccinator was employed by 1891-92 to meet the wishes of those who objected to male vaccinators visiting their houses.<sup>17</sup>

The Travancore state thus made great efforts to introduce Western medicine into its territory. That was largely because the state considered that providing 'charity' for its people was an important function of a Hindu state. In 1865, Maharaja Ayilliam Tirunal himself opened the General Hospital and stated through the Dewan that:

For time out of mind, charity has been regarded by Travancore as one of the cardinal duties of the state. Its reputation as Dhurma Raj is familiar to all India. What can be more real, more substantial charity, than the provision of means for the relief or mitigation of sickness and disease ... One of the main objects of my ambition is to see that good medical aid is placed within the reach of all classes of my subjects.<sup>18</sup>

Also, the Maharaja himself translated a paper entitled 'Sick-

---

<sup>15</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, p.782; Rajagopalachari, Note, p.51.

<sup>16</sup> TAR, 1866-67, p.97.

<sup>17</sup> TAR, 1891-92, p.231.

<sup>18</sup> TAR, 1865-66, pp.61-62; Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, p.537.

nursing' into Malayalam, which certainly helped to diffuse the image of a 'Charitable Raja'.<sup>19</sup>

This attitude of the Maharaja seems to have been very different from that of the British colonial authorities. In British India, medical priority was given, apart from jails, to the Army, which was one of the principal devices to maintain the British Empire.<sup>20</sup> By contrast, Travancore, which depended on the British for its defence, did not have a substantial military force except the Nayar Brigade with a strength of about 1,500. This was a 'semi-peasant force entirely recruited locally'. The men spent four days on duty and four days working in their fields, and their work was 'entirely guard and ceremonial duty'.<sup>21</sup> Thus, unlike the British in colonial India, the Travancore state had almost no necessity to provide health care for its military force to defend its own regime. Consequently, the attention of the Maharaja and the government was largely paid to the medical care of its own people.

Meanwhile, in conformity with the statement of the Maharaja, free medical relief was given to its people until about 1940 when the Travancore government passed certain rules

---

<sup>19</sup> Medical Mission, 1880, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>20</sup> Radhika Ramasubban, 'Imperial Health in British India, 1857-1900', in Roy MacLeod and Milton Lewis (eds.), Disease, Medicine, and Empire: Perspectives on Western Medicine and the Experience of European Expansion (London: Routledge, 1988), p.41.

<sup>21</sup> G.O. No.399, 400, 26 June 1899, PSP, L/P&S/7/263, OIOC.

to collect charges for treatment.<sup>22</sup> In addition, the government's institutions treated the lower castes as well. In this respect, its medical policy was very different from its educational one, which almost completely excluded the lower castes from the government schools at least until the late nineteenth century. As the table below indicates, the General Hospital in Trivandrum treated a large number of Izhavas and other lower castes as early as 1879-80.

TABLE 8: Castes and Communities Treated in the General Hospital in 1879-80

Caste and community	In-patient	Out-patient
Brahmins	105	1,714
Castes between Brahmins and Nayars	90	576
Nayars	308	2,680
Artisan Class	51	601
Izhavas	213	1,570
Lower Classes of Hindus	55	857
Mahomedans	35	653
Europeans	6	271
East Indians	44	956
Native Christians	245	2,527
Total	1,152	12,405

Source: Travancore Administration Report for 1879-80, p.57.

However, it is also true that the lower castes were not treated in an equal way. The higher and lower classes were accommodated in separate wards.<sup>23</sup> In addition, the Pulayas, the lowest caste, were not admitted to the General Hospital

<sup>22</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.IV, p.226.

<sup>23</sup> TAR, 1865-66, p.68.

or other government hospitals until the early twentieth century. In 1905, the Pulayas in Trivandrum submitted a petition to the government, and, as a result, a disused kitchen was converted into a ward for their use.<sup>24</sup> Not surprisingly, even after that, they had great difficulties in receiving treatment. The Salvation Army's officer described the treatment which the Pulayas received as follows:

They were not allowed to approach a Government hospital; instead they had to huddle under a tree some distance from the dispensary until the doctor, after having attended to all other patients and about to leave, would ask what the 'others' were suffering from. He would then give verbal instructions to the compounders to dispense medicines, or permit serious cases to be admitted to the Pulaya ward, a shed built some distance from the main hospital.<sup>25</sup>

The lower castes were thus discriminated against in their medical treatment. But, nevertheless, it can be still said that the state was more generous towards the lower castes in the area of medicine than in that of education.

In addition to the desire of the state to express its Hindu charitable role, a strong public demand for medical aid was also one of the causes which promoted the development of

---

<sup>24</sup> Kabir and Krishnan, 'Social Intermediation', p.16.

<sup>25</sup> L.V.L. Fletcher, Brother of All, (London: Salvation Army, 1956), p.8.

medicine in Travancore. In the year 1886-87, for example, the Administration Report stated that 'numerous petitions have been received for opening new hospitals and dispensaries in different parts of the country'.<sup>26</sup> Also at the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly, demands for the opening of medical dispensaries were frequently expressed.<sup>27</sup> The state thus had to respond to those demands. As a result, the number of patients treated in the government institutions increased sharply, as we have seen in Table 6. The necessity to respond to these growing public demands for medical aid was undoubtedly one of the principal reasons why the state supported the medical missions rather generously, as will be seen.

#### Public Health and the Rockefeller Foundation

Although medical relief was considerably developed in Travancore in the second half of the nineteenth century, public health, except vaccination, was not paid much attention to. It is true that the government began to spend small sums for the sanitation of the capital city of Trivandrum from 1876-77 onwards, and, also in 1880-81, a committee appointed by the government presented recommendations which included the construction of public latrines; the removal of night-soil and sweepings to a distance from the town; and the construction

---

<sup>26</sup> TAR, 1886-87, p.139.

<sup>27</sup> For example, SMPAP, 1904, p.28; 1912, p.70; and 1919, p.63.

of a number of dust boxes.<sup>28</sup> But substantial development of public health work did not start in Travancore until 1895 when the Sanitary Department was organized. Vaccination, vital statistics and sanitation were major activities of this department.<sup>29</sup> This department was perhaps established as a result of the influence of a shift in medical administration in British India. In the late nineteenth century the British began to argue that European health in India could only be assured through wider medical and sanitary measures. Also, the advances of bacteriology made by Pasteur, Koch and others at that time urged the necessity for preventive medicine.<sup>30</sup>

The next very important development of the public health administration in Travancore was co-operation with the Rockefeller Foundation and the subsequent formation of the Public Health Department in 1933-34. In 1928, in order to introduce higher standard of public health, the Travancore government requested the Rockefeller Foundation to depute one of their representatives to the state for giving advice in conducting public health work 'on up-to-date lines'.<sup>31</sup>

The Rockefeller Foundation's efforts to develop public health began in the early twentieth century. In 1909 they founded the Rockefeller Sanitary Commission for the Eradication of Hookworm Disease. Their initial concern was

---

<sup>28</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, pp.532-3.

<sup>29</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, pp.759-60; Nagam Aiya, Manual, p.499.

<sup>30</sup> David Arnold, 'Touching the Body', p.58.

<sup>31</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, p.762.

with the Southern U.S. That is, they tried to 'expand Southern agricultural productivity, and to prepare Southern whites and blacks for industrialization in largely Northern owned mills and factories'. For this purpose, they tried to diffuse education and public health in the South.<sup>32</sup> But soon attention was paid to the rest of the world as well. In 1913 their International Health Commission was created, and the hookworm programme was immediately extended abroad. In 1914 they began a campaign against yellow fever, and in 1915 another campaign against malaria.<sup>33</sup> They also helped to create a number of schools for public health in Harvard University and elsewhere to produce trained personnel. The creation of the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine in 1923 was one of the results.<sup>34</sup>

The Foundation's substantial commitment to India began in the Madras Presidency in the early 1920s. Their main concern was with the hookworm problem in the Presidency, where 'more than 70 percent' of the population was infected the worm. At first, demonstrations were made on the plantations, and then their work was expanded to other parts of the Presidency.<sup>35</sup>

---

<sup>32</sup> E.R. Brown, 'Public Health in Imperialism: Early Rockefeller Programs at Home and Abroad', American Journal of Public Health, 66,9, Sept. 1976, p.898.

<sup>33</sup> Ibid., p.899.

<sup>34</sup> Donald Fisher, 'Rockefeller Philanthropy and the British Empire: The Creation of the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine', History of Education, 7,2, 1978, pp.129, 139, 141.

<sup>35</sup> Rockefeller Foundation Annual Report, 1923, pp.110-11; Ibid., 1924, pp.116-7.

Apart from hookworm surveys and treatment, the Foundation helped the Madura District Board in the Madras Presidency conduct rural health work, including sanitary education and the construction of public latrines. Although similar activities were done subsequently in other parts of the Presidency, the Foundation's attention was almost confined to the hookworm problem in the Presidency.<sup>36</sup> In 1927, the Mysore government requested the Foundation to carry out a public health survey, which resulted in the arrangement to provide for the service of a consultant and a sanitary engineer as well as the operation of a rural health demonstration and malaria field stations.<sup>37</sup>

In 1928, Burma, Punjab and Travancore requested the Foundation to help them set up public health organizations.<sup>38</sup> As a result, the Foundation decided to assist the development of public health administration in Burma and Travancore for the next several years, but they apparently declined further assistance to Punjab. The reasons for this decision are not clear. But as far as literacy and the educational standard of the population was concerned, there was a great difference between Punjab and the other two applicants. In 1931, Burma attained a literacy rate of 36.8 percent, and Travancore 28.9 percent, while the literacy rate in Punjab was as low as 6.3

---

<sup>36</sup> Ibid., 1926, p.114.

<sup>37</sup> Ibid., 1927, p.125; 1928, p.202.

<sup>38</sup> Ibid., 1928, p.202.



percent.<sup>39</sup> The Foundation might have considered that a higher standard of education was necessary for their successful operation. Moreover, at least in Travancore, medical institutions were well developed compared with other parts of India, as we have seen, and therefore Travancore might have been considered one of the appropriate places in which the Rockefeller Foundation could demonstrate its philanthropy.

In any case, the Foundation's relation to Travancore began substantially in 1928, when the state sent the request to the Foundation. One of the direct reasons for the government request was the cholera epidemic of 1927-1929 which caused 10,727 deaths in Travancore. In fact, cholera repeatedly caused heavy mortality, and combating cholera was one of the most prominent objects in organizing a new Public Health Department.<sup>40</sup> Thus, Dr. W.P. Jacocks, a representative of the Foundation, arrived in 1929 and submitted 'a modern Public Health Scheme' after touring the country to make a study of the local conditions and requirements. Besides, two officers of the Travancore government were deputed to the United States to undergo special training, and the Foundation also awarded foreign and Indian fellowships for six of the officers dealing with public health work.<sup>41</sup>

In 1930, the suggested working programme was put into operation. This programme was a very comprehensive and

---

<sup>39</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.I, India, Part I, Report (Delhi: Manager of Publications, 1933), p.339.

<sup>40</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol. III, pp.775-6.

<sup>41</sup> Ibid., p.764.

advanced one. It comprised a hookworm treatment campaign, public health education, epidemiological and vital statistical investigations, health unit work, medical entomology and plague control measures.<sup>42</sup> In this way, the Public Health Department was formed. The work of the new department consisted of registration of vital statistics, control of communicable diseases, vaccination, plague control measures, and malaria and filariasis surveys and their control.<sup>43</sup>

In addition to these activities, the management of the Public Health Laboratory and the Health Unit at Neyyattinkara and the conducting of maternity and child welfare work, public health education and rural sanitation were some of the principal activities of the department. The Public Health Laboratory had several stations - 'the Bacteriological Section', 'the Research Section', 'the Small-pox Vaccine Section', 'the Medical Entomology Section', 'the Chemical Examiner's Section' and 'the Public Analyst's Section'. It conducted various diagnostic tests and other examinations and supplied various kinds of vaccines such as typhoid, cholera and small-pox vaccines.<sup>44</sup> This laboratory seems to have been a very advanced one. It was the only laboratory in India where a special blood tests, called Kahn's, Hinton's and Wasserman's, were conducted at that time.<sup>45</sup>

---

<sup>42</sup> Ibid., p.764; TAR, 1938-39, p.171.

<sup>43</sup> TAR, 1938-39, p.171.

<sup>44</sup> TAR, 1938-39, pp.175-6.

<sup>45</sup> Ibid., p.175.

The Health Unit work at Neyyattinkara was also one of the most important activities that the Rockefeller Foundation recommended to conduct. This unit was a comprehensive rural health organization which covered an area of 40 square miles with a population of 73,340. Perhaps the most important aspect of this unit work was that it served as 'a demonstration and training centre for health workers'.<sup>46</sup> In this unit, maternity and child care was one of the things to which the greatest attention was given. Free midwifery was provided, and pre-natal and infant clinics were held in ten clinic centres. In 1938-39, 47.5 percent of the total number of pregnant women was registered and received five months' pre-natal care.<sup>47</sup> There can be no doubt that this unit produced a large number of health workers and that these workers contributed considerably to the development of public health in Travancore and hence in today's Kerala.

Public health education was also an important part of the public health work in Travancore. The total number of lectures and talks on public health subjects given during the year 1938-39 was 1,044 to an estimated audience of 145,000 persons. In that year, an intensive lecture campaign on bored-hole latrines was carried out in rural areas. Besides, public health exhibitions were organized, and pamphlets were distributed. Cinema films on public health were also purchased

---

<sup>46</sup> TAR, 1938-39, p.177.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid.

by the Public Health Department.<sup>48</sup> In addition, the department paid much attention to rural sanitation work including the sinking of new wells; repairs, cleaning and disinfection of existing wells; and sanitation of markets, fairs and places where festivals were held.<sup>49</sup> Thus, the support of the Foundation was substantial and undoubtedly contributed to the development of public health in Travancore. There is no doubt that these operations in Travancore were also a great success for the Foundation itself. The Directors of the Foundation visited Travancore and expressed 'their high appreciation of the Public health activities in the State'.<sup>50</sup>

#### Medical Activities of the LMS

The LMS had a substantial medical mission in Travancore although the number of patients it treated was, as we have seen, much smaller than the government institutions treated. The Travancore state recognized the usefulness of this mission and gave considerable support to the mission. Thus, the medical mission maintained a good relationship with the Maharajas and the government.

The first medical missionary sent to Travancore was A. Ramsay. In 1838, he began medical work at Neyyur, one of the mission stations in south Travancore. But he left the mission

---

<sup>48</sup> TAR, 1938-39, p.178.

<sup>49</sup> Ibid.

<sup>50</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, p.764.

in 1842 to take up another job in India, and the medical mission work was discontinued. Then, another medical missionary, Dr. Charles Leitch, was sent to Travancore in 1852. He restarted the work at Neyyur, but it was discontinued again after Leitch drowned while bathing at the sea near Neyyur. In 1861, Dr. John Lowe was sent there, and a substantial development of the medical mission began after his arrival.<sup>51</sup>

An American missionary pointed out at a missionary conference held in 1879 that the following factors were necessary for 'thorough Medical Mission work': (1) a medical missionary, (2) a central dispensary and hospital, (3) a medical school or class, and (4) funds.<sup>52</sup> The medical mission of the LMS in south Travancore had most of these. A medical training class, which was undoubtedly one of the most important activities for the expansion of the medical mission, was started by Lowe in 1864. The first course was finished in 1867, and the students who had received medical education were posted to the newly-established dispensaries at Attur, Santhapuram and Agasteespuram in 1868, and at Nagercoil in 1871 and at Tittuvilei in 1874. In this training class, a Hindu student called Govindan received a medical education. He was supported by the First Prince of Travancore and was employed by the Travancore government after finishing the

---

<sup>51</sup> Medical Mission, 1937, Box 12, TR, CWMA.

<sup>52</sup> The Missionary Conference: South India and Ceylon, 1879, vol.1, Papers, Discussions, and General Review (Madras: Addison, 1880), p.258.

course.<sup>53</sup>

Thus, the medical mission continued to expand. In 1902, it had 17 out-stations. The Neyyur Hospital was one of the largest hospitals in Travancore. In addition, it afforded a high standard treatment with 'up-to-date' equipment. The first X-ray machine was, for example, installed in 1923, which was the only one of its kind in south India other than Madras. Also, it introduced radium for cancer treatment in 1930.<sup>54</sup> As a result, the hospital often accepted cases which the government hospitals were unable to treat.<sup>55</sup> E.A. Harlow, a medical missionary, wrote in 1931 that 'the death rate of our surgical cases is substantially less than it is in the large hospitals in London and in the Presidency towns in India'.<sup>56</sup>

The medical mission in Travancore was by far the largest mission of its kind set up by the LMS. In 1930, for example, the LMS had 23 medical mission stations which treated 372,410 patients world-wide, while the medical mission in Travancore alone treated 163,121 patients. That is, it treated 43.8 percent of the patients treated by all the medical missions of the LMS.<sup>57</sup> There can be no doubt that the Directors of the LMS were very determined to develop this work in Travancore. Well-qualified medical missionaries were almost continuously

---

<sup>53</sup> Ibid.; Medical Mission, 1867, Box 1, TR, CWMA.

<sup>54</sup> 'Kanyakumari Medical Mission: Important Events at a Glance', Neyyur Hospital Library.

<sup>55</sup> Medical Mission, 1902, Box 7, TR, CWMA.

<sup>56</sup> Medical Mission, 1931, Box 11, TR, CWMA.

<sup>57</sup> LMS Annual Report for 1930, p.159.

sent to Travancore. Table 9 shows the names and qualifications of the medical missionaries along with the years in which they worked in Travancore.

TABLE 9: LMS Medical Missionaries in Travancore, 1838-1937

-----		
M.A. Ramsey .....	1838 to 1840	(or 1842)
C. Leitch, MRCS Edin. ....	1852 to 1854	
John Lowe, FRCS Edin. ....	1861 to 1868	
T.S. Thomson, LRCP&S, Edin. ....	1873 to 1885	
E. Sargood Fry, MB, CM, Edin. ....	1885 to 1892	
A. Fells, MB, CM, Edin. ....	1892 to 1905	
S.H. Davies, LRCP&S, Edin. ....	1901 to 1902	
W.C. Bentall, LRCP&S, Edin. ....	1905 to 1913	
H.C. Orrin, FRCS, Edin. ....	1909 to 1910	
H. Bulloch, MB, CHB, Edin. ....	1911 to 1913	
S.H. Pugh, MB, CHB, Edin. ....	1912 to 1926	
G.A.P. Thomas, MB, CHB, Edin. ....	1913 to 1916	
T. Howard Somervell, MA, MB, BCH, FRCS, Eng.	1923 to	
Dudley P. Marks, BA, MB, BCH, FRCS, Eng. ..	1926 to 1928	
Ian M. Orr, MD, CHB, FRCS, Edin. ..	1927 to 1936	
D. Joan Thompson, MA, MB, BCH. ....	1936	
J.R. Davidson, MD. ....	1937	
-----		

Source: South Travancore Medical Mission, 1937, Box 12, TR, CWMA. MB stands for Bachelor of Medicine; CHB, Bachelor of Surgery; MRCS, Member of the Royal College of Surgeons; LRCP, Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians; Eng., England; and Edin., Edinburgh.

In addition to the efforts of the LMS itself, another and perhaps more important reason for the development was that the medical mission received considerable help from the Maharajas and their government. They gave large sums in subscriptions and grants to the mission. The sources of income of the medical mission for 1875, for example, were as follows:

TABLE 10: Income for 1875 of the LMS Medical Mission, Travancore

Source of income	Rs.	A	
Subscriptions from India	2,797	1	6
Subscriptions from Scotland and England	698	4	0
Interest on surplus Famine Fund	137	8	0
Balance from last year	51	8	11
Sale of Medicine and Books	116	2	0
Amount in collecting boxes	31	12	10
Total	3,832	5	3

Source: Medical Mission, 1875, Box 2, TR, CWMA.

The medical mission thus greatly depended on the 'subscriptions from India' at the early stage of its development. Among the subscribers, the Maharaja and other member of the ruling family were the most important to the missionaries. The Maharaja afforded the largest amount of annual subscriptions. In 1875, for example, Rs.200 was given to the mission by the Maharaja. But what was more important than the amount was the influence of the Maharaja. In 1882, T.S. Thomson, a medical missionary, wrote that 'His Highness the Maharaja, his minister and those under them who have followed their good example in helping on this charitable work, have our best thanks'.<sup>58</sup> In fact, in 1875, Dewan Seshiah Sastri subscribed Rs.40, Nanoo Pillay (Dewan, 1877-80) Rs.30, and S. Shungurasubbier (Dewan, 1892-98) Rs.90.<sup>59</sup> Other high-caste Hindus such as tahsildars also subscribed a considerable amount as well. The tahsildar of Eraneal in south

<sup>58</sup> Medical Mission, 1882, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>59</sup> Medical Mission, 1875, TR, Box 2, CWMA.



Travancore, for example, donated Rs.70 in 1877.<sup>60</sup> There is no doubt that their subscriptions would have become much less if it had not been for the Maharaja's favourable attitude towards the medical mission.

Meanwhile, as the medical mission developed, it came to depend more and more on sales of medicines and fees or 'offerings' collected from the patients for its income. In 1897, the medical mission adopted a plan for selling medicines to all who could afford to pay for them. In 1914, the income was collected from the following sources:

TABLE 11: Income for 1914 of the LMS Medical Mission, Travancore

Source of income	Rs.	A.	P.
Sales of medicines	15,077	11	3
Fees	1,310	15	3
Offerings of patients	2,273	12	7
Subscriptions from Great Britain and Australia	4,280	0	8
Subscriptions from India	217	0	0
Grants from the Travancore Government	1,918	0	11
Grants from the LMS	1,112	0	0
Medical Class Fund	623	4	1
Balance from 1913	100	3	5
Total	28,676	15	5

Source: Medical Mission, 1914, Box 9, TR, CWMA.

Thus, the income collected from sales of medicines, fees and 'offerings' was about Rs.18,660 in total, which means more than 65 per cent of the income was collected from patients in

<sup>60</sup> Medical Mission, 1877, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

1914. In 1928, this percentage rose to more than 70 percent.<sup>61</sup> The medical mission thus became increasingly independent of the Travancore government financially, though it still received considerable sums of the form of grants from the Travancore government.

Meanwhile, apart from these annual subscriptions, the Maharajas helped the missionaries in establishing hospitals and dispensaries. In about 1874, the Travancore government handed an old rest house at Tittuvilei in south Travancore to the missionaries and gave the entire cost of Rs.877 to convert it into a dispensary.<sup>62</sup> Again in 1878, the government gave an old salt store to the mission at a village called Kulasengaram, which was located 'in the middle of the most malarious district' in the state. The Maharaja also granted Rs.200 for the new building for the Neyyur Hospital.<sup>63</sup> In addition, retired Dewans such as Nanoo Pillay and Rama Row supported the medical mission. In 1883, Nanoo Pillay laid the foundation stone of the mission dispensary at Attur.<sup>64</sup> Rama Row, also after retirement, requested the missionaries to superintend a dispensary which he would build in south Travancore. He built the dispensary and then legally conveyed

---

<sup>61</sup> Medical Mission, 1928, Box 10, TR, CWMA.

<sup>62</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1880, p.4.

<sup>63</sup> Medical Mission, 1937, Box 12, TR, CWMA; J.H. Hacker, Memoirs of Thomas Smith Thomson, (London: Religious Tract Society, 1887), p.58.

<sup>64</sup> Medical Mission, 1883, TR, Box 3, CWMA.

them together with some rice lands to the mission.<sup>65</sup>

It is true that, especially after the late nineteenth century, the state seems to have become less generous in supporting the medical mission of the LMS. In 1897, the Travancore government instituted a grant-in-aid system for medical institutions and then declined to give grants to the LMS institutions except the Neyyur Hospital and one other dispensary, on the ground that the men in charge had no government qualifications. However, it is doubtful that the government had any intention of impeding the development of the medical mission, or that the missionaries understood that to be so. Even after the commencement of the grant-in-aid system, A. Fells, an LMS medical missionary, wrote in his report for 1900 that the Maharaja was 'always a true friend'.<sup>66</sup> Even, in the 1930s, their relationship does not seem to have deteriorated. In 1935, I.M. Orr, a medical missionary, reported on the co-operation between the medical mission and the Travancore government in the malaria epidemic and the cholera outbreak.<sup>67</sup> This was largely because these and other epidemics were still very serious problems in Travancore. In fact, even in the 1930s, they killed a great number of people. In July 1936, the AGG reported that 908 people had died from cholera and 333 from smallpox in

---

<sup>65</sup> LMS Chronicle, 1901, pp.165-5.

<sup>66</sup> Medical Mission, 1900, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>67</sup> Medical Mission, 1935, TR, Box 12, CWMA.

Travancore since the beginning of 1936.<sup>68</sup> Therefore, the state certainly needed the help of the missionaries. In addition, the ruling family privately maintained an intimate relationship with the medical missionaries of the LMS. In 1933, the Maharaja visited the Neyyur Hospital to attend the opening ceremony of a new building and then stated that 'He [Dr. Pugh, an LMS medical missionary] was a trusted advisor of my family and myself ... I am happy that the friendly relations between my family and the Doctors in charge of institution have been maintained right through'. After that, the Maharaja announced that he would donate Rs. 1,000 to the hospital.<sup>69</sup> Moreover, the state keenly supported the medical activities of the Salvation Army, which rapidly developed from the late nineteenth century, as will be seen next.

#### Medical Activities of the Salvation Army

The Salvation Army had a substantial hospital in Nagercoil and dispensaries in other places. There is no doubt that its medical institutions contributed considerably to the development of medicine in Travancore, and the Maharaja and the government supported them fairly generously, as in the case of the LMS medical mission.

The Salvation Army first established its headquarters at

---

<sup>68</sup> Fortnight Report, second half of July 1936, CRR R/1/1/2791, OIOC.

<sup>69</sup> C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar, Speeches and Messages of His Highness Sir Bala Rama Varma, Maharaja of Travancore (Trivandrum: Anantha Rama Varma Press, 1938), pp.37-8.

Nagercoil in November 1892. By 1899, it had extended its activities to Tiruvalla and Mavelikara in central Travancore.<sup>70</sup> Although the commencement of their activities in Travancore was thus much later than those of the LMS or the CMS, the number of its adherents increased rapidly. In 1931, it had 58,991 Christians, while the CMS had 85,261.<sup>71</sup>

The medical activity of the Salvation Army in Travancore was started by a man called Harry Andrew. After he was sent to Nagercoil at the age of seventeen, he began to use the 'healing virtues' which he possessed in a bathroom in 1893. This attracted a number of people and suggested the idea of a medical mission to the leaders of the Salvation Army. He was then ordered to take a dresser's course at a hospital in London. A year later, in 1895, he returned to Nagercoil and set up the Catherine Booth Dispensary. This dispensary soon developed into the Catherine Booth Hospital largely at the hands of Dr. Percy Turner, and it became one of the main hospitals in Travancore.<sup>72</sup>

Unlike Harry Andrew, Percy Turner was a highly-qualified

---

<sup>70</sup> Joseph Chako, 'The History of the Salvation Army in Kerala', B.D. Thesis, United Theological College, 1979, pp.24,39.

<sup>71</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932), p.338.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid., pp.83-4; Solveig Smith, By Love Compelled, (London: Salvationist Publishing, 1981), pp.77-9. Harry Andrew was transferred to Gujarat in 1903, and there he established a hospital called the Emery Hospital. Then he was sent to America to take a degree in medicine and surgery. In 1912, he returned to India and opened a hospital in Moradabad in the United Provinces. The Salvation Army had three central hospitals in India in 1919, all of which were originally established by Harry Andrew.

doctor when he first came to India. He was born in 1870 and was brought up in the Church of England. Then he met the Salvation Army in his student days and joined the movement. He qualified as M.R.C.S.Eng. (Member of the Royal College of Surgeons of England), L.R.C.P.Lond. (Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians of London), in 1893 and was awarded the Brackenbury Scholarship in Medicine in 1894. He then completed M.B.B.S. examinations in 1898 and took the D.P.H. (Doctor of Public Health) Oxford in 1899.<sup>73</sup>

He sailed for India in November 1900 and took charge of the dispensary in 1901. Soon after his arrival, he sought to transform the Catherine Booth Dispensary into a general hospital. Thus, on 27 April 1901, the stone-laying ceremony of the Catherine Booth Hospital took place. Under Turner's supervision, the hospital continued to develop.<sup>74</sup> In 1919, it had seven acres of land, on which were built seventeen buildings including wards accommodating sixty patients, an operating theatre and a laboratory. In addition, by 1919 it had four branch hospitals, twenty three medical officers, thirty compounders and a number of nurses.<sup>75</sup>

Turner had a very clear idea about the function of the medical mission. He itemized their 'future plan of work' as follows:

---

<sup>73</sup> Copy of Obituary Notices sent by Mr. A.E. Stevens, File No. Turner 1, Salvation Army International Heritage Centre.

<sup>74</sup> All the World, Jan. 1901, p.34: ibid., Sept. 1914, p.538; Smith, By Love Compelled, pp.78-9.

<sup>75</sup> All the World, 1919, p.31.

(a) The actual medical and surgical work of the Hospital.

(b) The training of native assistants, who shall be able to hereafter take charge of branch dispensaries.

(c) The imparting to a larger number of our purely evangelistic workers some amount of knowledge of the rudiments of Hygiene and of 'First Aid', so that in the villages where they are at work they may be able to be of some assistance in leading their people in ways of physical as well as spiritual health.<sup>76</sup>

Like the LMS, the Salvation Army paid great attention to the training of Indian assistants. Accordingly, a four-year medical course was started with financial aid from the Maharaja of Travancore. Three men were trained in the first medical class and were put in charge of the branch hospitals after completing the course.<sup>77</sup> Then, another medical class was organized, which was much larger than the former. In addition to the Salvationists, fourteen private students were allowed to join the class. The majority of them were Syrian Christians.<sup>78</sup> During his time, Turner trained six Salvationists and sent them to branch hospitals. Some

---

<sup>76</sup> All the World, Mar. 1902, p.130.

<sup>77</sup> Smith, By Love Compelled, p.78; 'Light, Healing and Life', Medical India, p.12, folder 2, International Heritage Centre.

<sup>78</sup> Ibid., p.11.

hospitals were built in the places known for malaria.<sup>79</sup> At that time, malaria was one of the most serious diseases in Travancore, and this disease affected many people living over very large area. In particular, the foot of the hills from Bhuthappandy, about ten miles north to Nagercoil, to Thodupula, about thirty miles north-east to Kottayam, formed 'a hyper-endemic belt of malaria'.<sup>80</sup> There could be no doubt that people there greatly needed medical relief. And this might have been one of the reasons why, as will be seen, the state supported the medical activities of the Salvation Army.

As to the patients, from January to September 1905 for example, the Catherine Booth Hospital dealt with 3,047 out-patients. Among them, 1,380 were caste Hindus.<sup>81</sup> Thus, a great number of high castes were treated. That was partly because the hospital itself paid considerable attention to the caste feelings of Hindus. A private ward and a separate kitchen were provided for the in-patient who desired to maintain, according to the Salvation Army's report, 'the dignity and purity of his twice-born condition', although this privilege was also opened to wealthy low-caste patients. In addition, patients were generally expected to provide their own food if possible.<sup>82</sup> This measure, needless to say, helped

---

<sup>79</sup> 'Memorials of Colonel Turner', File Turner 1, International Heritage Centre.

<sup>80</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, p.777.

<sup>81</sup> 'Notes of Inspection', Private Papers, File Turner 1, International Heritage Centre.

<sup>82</sup> 'Light, Healing and Life', p.14.



the higher castes to avoid caste pollution at least to some extent. The hospital thus attracted a large number of high-caste patients and their friends. This was extremely favourable for their religious activities, which will be examined later.

Meanwhile, the Maharaja and his government showed considerable interest in the medical work of the Salvation Army. In addition to giving grants to the Hospital and the branches, the Maharaja from time to time gave large donations for the construction of new wards and for other purposes. In 1912, for example, Maharaja Sri Mulam donated Rs.3,350 in the name of his consort for the erection of a new men's ward, and, in 1922, the thatched walls of the first ward were replaced by a solid masonry block and half of the cost was borne by the Maharaja and his consort.<sup>83</sup> The Maharaja also donated 'a tri-wheeled motor', which was the first of its type in Travancore. This gesture along with other donations undoubtedly succeeded in spreading the idea of the charitable Maharaja. When Turner travelled by this vehicle, 'everybody knew Highness's friend Dr. Turner was going to attend patients' by car.<sup>84</sup> The donations from the Maharaja still continued in the 1930s. In 1934, a new 'Administrative and Outpatients Block' was opened by C.P. Ramaswamy Aiyar, who was then the Legal and Constitutional Advisor to the Maharaja and who was also known

---

<sup>83</sup> 'Catherine Booth Hospital', 1922, p.24, Medical India A, folder 2, International Heritage Centre; 'Light, Healing and Life', p.8; 'Worthy Notes of Mention', p.2, Turner 1, International Heritage Centre.

<sup>84</sup> Ibid.

for his anti-Christian policy, as will be seen in the next chapter. Towards the construction of this block, Maharaja Sri Chitra donated Rs.10,000.<sup>85</sup>

Thus, there is no doubt that the state needed the medical activities of the Salvation Army as well as those of the LMS. It certainly appreciated the services of a highly-qualified doctor like Turner, having a modern and well-equipped hospital and dispensaries, and the training abilities of the hospital which produced a number of doctors and nurses. In addition, the state seems to have expected the Salvation Army to provide medical relief especially to the poor people, whom the government institutions were not always willing to deal with, although a large number of high castes were treated there as well. In his letter to Turner, the Maharaja wrote in 1912 that 'I realize that your labours on behalf of the poorer portion of my subjects are prompted by love and charity'.<sup>86</sup> On the other hand, by patronizing medical institutions, the Maharaja was able to gain a reputation as a charitable ruler within the convention of Hindu society and dharma. In this sense, the donation of the 'tri-wheeled motor', which greatly advertised Maharaja's charity, was aptly symbolic.

---

<sup>85</sup> 'Another Medical Advance', War Cry, Sep. 1934, vol.40, No.9, p.3.

<sup>86</sup> 'Light, Healing and Life', pp.7-8.

### The CMS and Medical Activities

Unlike the LMS and the Salvation Army, the CMS did not send medical missionaries to Travancore, and consequently, it did not have any substantial medical institutions. But, nevertheless, it had some functions to provide medical relief for people though they were on a considerably small scale and far from permanent.

In 1870, the CMS missionaries had dispensaries at least at Kannankulam, Mavelikara and Tiruwalla. At Mavelikara, a 'medical evangelist' called G.J. Kuruwella was in charge of the dispensary. 1,134 patients were treated there in 1870.<sup>87</sup> Thus, there were some CMS dispensaries, but it is not clear how long they continued. In 1873, when the CMS missionaries expressed their view on the 'medical agency', they were very doubtful of its success without direct supervision of a European doctor.<sup>88</sup> It is not clear why a European doctor was considered necessary. But the role of the medical missionary was not only to treat patients but also to train Indian students who would largely become doctors of the mission dispensaries. Thus, it might have been considered that this task could only be done by those who were given higher medical education in the West. In any case, the CMS in Travancore did not have a medical missionary after that either.

---

<sup>87</sup> Madras Church Missionary Record, Mar. 1871, p.73; Ibid., Nov. 1871, pp.326-7.

<sup>88</sup> Minutes of Travancore Conference, 10 Dec. 1873, Mission Book M30, CMSA.

Apart from the dispensary, however, the CMS missionaries conducted some medical activities. In 1884, A.F. Painter, a CMS missionary who was in charge of the work among a tribal people called the 'Arrians', reported his medical activities. He received medicines from the Travancore government and other bodies including a Medical Missionary Association. He then used them to treat people. He wrote that 'the death rate among our people has been far below the average, due, under God, to my being thus able to doctor them. I ... only wish that my medical knowledge increased with my practice'.<sup>89</sup> This kind of practice was widely prevalent among the CMS missionaries in Travancore. In 1933, the Diocesan Council of the CMS stated that 'non-professional individual missionaries have often successfully tried to minister to the simple needs of the sick around them'.<sup>90</sup> However, recognizing the necessity for providing more professional medical relief, the CMS missionaries had at least two 'Floating Dispensaries' in the 1930s. These were boats which travelled through the backwaters with medical facilities. Besides, they had a dispensary and a maternity centre in the 1930s.<sup>91</sup>

The CMS sent some medical missionaries to other parts of India, especially to the North-West Frontier, and in the 1880s, the CMS founded mission hospitals in that area. That

---

<sup>89</sup> 'Travancore and Cochin', Church Missionary Intelligencer, April 1885, p.319.

<sup>90</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Magazine, Nov. 1933, p.149.

<sup>91</sup> Ibid., July 1935, pp.90-1; Ibid., Mar. 1937, pp.37-8.

was largely because other methods of diffusing Christianity were considered as 'inefficient or impossible' due to the 'fierce fanaticism' of the Muslims living there.<sup>92</sup> Although it is not clear why the CMS did not send any medical missionaries to Travancore, it was at least one of the reasons that priority was given to more difficult areas like the NWP.

### Religious Activities of the Medical Missions

The medical mission had two main roles for the missionaries in terms of religious activities. One was to convert people, especially the higher castes, and the other was to prevent converted Christians from re-conversion, especially when they fell ill. J. Knowles, an LMS missionary, stated in 1898 that:

Medical work will enable the Mission to touch the hearts of classes who otherwise are likely to remain shut up in their Heathenism... It is also a great help with Christian adherents in the struggle against demonism and superstition.<sup>93</sup>

Prevention of re-conversion was undoubtedly an important purpose. As is well-known, it was widely believed that diseases were caused by supernatural things such as demons and goddesses. A number of Christians resorted to 'Heathen

---

<sup>92</sup> Gibbs, The Anglican Church in India, pp.330-1.

<sup>93</sup> Quilon, 1898, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

practices' when they became ill. Especially at the time of smallpox, they tended to join their 'old heathen associates' to make offerings to the goddess Mariamman, who was supposed to cause the disease.<sup>94</sup> Therefore, it was an important function of the medical mission to cure its Christians with Western medicine so as to prevent them from reverting to their former practices. But, perhaps a much more important purpose was to establish contact with the higher castes. As we have seen, a large number of high-caste Hindus was treated in the mission hospitals. Undoubtedly, many of these high-caste patients came in contact with the missionaries for the first time. They were taught Christianity when they visited hospitals and dispensaries.

The LMS and the Salvation Army conducted religious activities in their medical institutions from the beginning. In 1862, John Lowe, a medical missionary of the LMS, reported that:

Seldom fewer than seventy or eighty, including patients and their friends, are at present at the religious service conducted when the Dispensary opens in the morning... Tracts or portions of Scripture are given to all who can read, and the Catechist spends some time in personal conversation with the patients in the waiting

---

<sup>94</sup> Attingal, 1931, TR, Box 11, CWMA; Medical Mission, 1902, TR, Box 7, CWMA; Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record, Aug. 1908, vol.18, No.4.

room.<sup>95</sup>

The practice had not substantially changed even sixty years after that. In 1922, at the Neyyur Hospital, there was a meeting at the entrance hall at 8:30, where the Gospel was read and explained. In addition, there were meetings twice a week in the wards for those who could not come to the hall. Moreover, the 'hospital evangelist' used the opportunity which the hospital offered 'at all hours all the day long'.<sup>96</sup> The Salvation Army also had a meeting between nine and ten o'clock in the morning so as to give the 'spiritual help' to those who came to the hospital.<sup>97</sup>

However, it is doubtful that the missionaries succeeded in their efforts to convert high castes through medical relief and associated religious activities. It is true that the missionaries reported from time to time how influential their medical mission was. But they do not seem to have given enough evidence for their statements, that is to say, the cases of actual conversion. One medical missionary wrote in 1929 that 'Although there has been no conversion to Christianity, yet the living seed which is being sown is gradually taking root in the hearts of the people'.<sup>98</sup> But, in any case, it is still true that the missionaries highly fully utilized the

---

<sup>95</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1861, p.22.

<sup>96</sup> The Hospital Neyyoor, 1922, TR, Box 10, CWMA.

<sup>97</sup> 'Duties of the Assistant Medical Officers', 1916, Turner 2, International Heritage Centre.

<sup>98</sup> Medical Mission, 1929, TR, Box 10, CWMA.

opportunity to contact with these people in their medical institutions, even if the results, in terms of actual conversions, were disappointing.

Meanwhile, these activities, in a sense, meant that the missionaries took advantage of 'the sick and the helpless who are least able to resist',<sup>99</sup> although undoubtedly most of the missionaries did not think so. Most of them no doubt considered the medical activities as bringing 'true comfort and peace to their souls' as well as 'relieving their bodily pains'.<sup>100</sup> However, the medical activities of the missionaries, as in the case of their educational activities, gradually became a target for criticisms from the higher castes. At the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly, one member, called T. Marthanan Tampi, stated in 1907 that the missionaries used medical relief as well as education and attendance in courts for the purpose of conversion.<sup>101</sup> In 1935, a CMS missionary in Travancore reported M.K. Gandhi's statement in Young India that:

If instead of confining themselves purely to humanitarian work such as education, medical service to the poor and the like, they would use these activities of theirs for proselytizing, I would certainly like them

---

<sup>99</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Magazine, Nov. 1933, p.150.

<sup>100</sup> Medical Mission, 1901, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

<sup>101</sup> SMPAP, 1907, p.111.



to withdraw.<sup>102</sup>

These criticisms had an influence on the missionaries themselves. In 1933, a sub-committee of the CMS in Travancore and Cochin stated that:

the ministry of healing ... should never be misused so as to take the slightest advantage of the people's need of help for suffering to enforce upon them any religious teaching with which they would otherwise not have cared to come into contact.<sup>103</sup>

However, it is not appropriate to over-emphasize the opposition from the high-caste Hindus. The criticisms made against medical missions seem to have been fewer than those against the educational activities of the missionaries. When people criticized medical missions, they almost always criticized the mission schools as well, and not vice versa. This tendency seems not to have confined to Travancore. Norman Goodall has pointed out in his book on the LMS that 'No missionary activity has provoked less controversy or raised fewer objections from the uninstructed than has the work of medical missions'.<sup>104</sup> Thus, it can safely be said that the

---

<sup>102</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Magazine, July 1935, p.88.

<sup>103</sup> Ibid., Nov. 1933, p.151.

<sup>104</sup> Norman Goodall, A History of the London Missionary Society, 1895-1945 (London: Oxford University Press, 1954), p.508.

opposition from the higher castes against the medical missions was less intensive than that against their educational activities.

### Indigenous Medicine and the State

As we have seen, the Travancore state made great efforts to provide medical relief for its people and also considerably helped the medical institutions run by the LMS and the Salvation Army. Although these efforts were confined to Western medicine at first, the state began to take more and more interest in indigenous medicine from the late nineteenth century onwards. As a result of this policy, indigenous medicine developed greatly in Travancore.

In Travancore, every village had a native practitioner called vaidyan. The vaidyans knew the medicinal plants and herbs and collected them to make drugs himself. As to the castes of these vaidyans, at least Nambudiri Brahmins, Ambaravasis, Nayars and Izhavas engaged in the occupation. Some of the Nambudiri practitioners traced their medical knowledge to the instruction of Parasurama, a legendary conqueror of Kerala. The Izhavas also claimed that they had been 'from time immemorial' noted for their proficiency in the native medical art. Also, among the vaidyans listed in the Travancore Almanac for 1918, about 45 percent were clearly Nayars.<sup>105</sup>

---

<sup>105</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, pp.551-4; TAR 1930-31, p.176; SMPAP, 1907, p.110; Travancore Almanac, 1918, pp.651-4.

These vaidyans treated patients who belonged to castes lower than their own and also other religious communities. Nagam Aiya described the treatment conducted by a famous Nambudiri vaidyan called Vayakkara Masu as follows:

the Masu and his visitors would all sit on the floor of an open front verandah of the Illam, while those who would not sit with him would stand in the yard or if they were of an inferior caste, outside the enclosure, but all were before him and in view and he would talk to all who had come.<sup>106</sup>

Various communities including 'inferior' castes thus received some medical treatment from the vaidyans. It is, however, doubtful that the lowest castes, such as Pulayas and Parayas, were treated by these native practitioners. Ward and Conner stated after their survey from 1816 to 1820 that 'they [the Pulayas] experience little sympathy in sickness'.<sup>107</sup> Also, A. Fells, an LMS medical missionary, wrote that the Pulayas and the Kuravas, both of which were among the lowest castes, called only for the help of a 'devil dancer' when they were ill.<sup>108</sup>

Meanwhile, the Travancore government almost completely

---

<sup>106</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, p.555., Illam is the name for the house mainly of a Nambudiri Brahmin.

<sup>107</sup> Ward and Conner, Memoir of the Survey of the Travancore and Cochin States (Trivandrum: Sircar Press, 1863), vol.I, p.140.

<sup>108</sup> Medical Mission, 1899, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

neglected indigenous medicine for many decades in the nineteenth century. It is true that it employed a vaidyan at the Civil Hospital for the purpose of supplying various drugs used in indigenous medicine for experiment.<sup>109</sup> It also employed other vaidyans for special duties to treat patients during epidemics.<sup>110</sup> But, otherwise, it paid almost no attention to vaidyans, and, partly due to this neglect, the standard of their medicine was not always high.

Under these circumstances, indigenous medicine was sometimes severely criticized. Francis Day, a medical officer to the Cochin government, stated in 1863 that 'The Hindu and Mahomedan treatises upon medicine, are voluminous, and their ideas of many diseases, very absurd', although he recognized that 'they have a few good simples in use'.<sup>111</sup> The missionaries more or less shared this view. As an example of 'the disastrous methods' of the vaidyans, A. Fells, an LMS medical missionary, reported a case of a woman treated by native physicians as follows:

A woman dislocated the lower jaw when yawning... To begin with, they took a handful of grain, held it over a fire till it was scorching hot and then filled the woman's mouth with it. This was repeated 3 or 4 times till the mouth was so burnt that the patient was unable

---

<sup>109</sup> TAR, 1868-69, p.72.

<sup>110</sup> TAR, 1892-93, p.131.

<sup>111</sup> Day, The Land of the Permauls, p.422.

to swallow even fluids. Next they steamed her head with medicated decoctions, till she was nearly suffocated. Then native bone setters were called in, but their efforts were in vain, and as soon as the patient regained the power of swallowing, native physicians administered a variety of internal medicines - all of no avail. After 9 days of fruitless suffering and frequent offerings to demons the poor woman was taken to the dispensary [of the mission] where the momentary manipulation of the jaw by hands guided by a knowledge of the anatomy of the injured parts was all that was required to reduce the dislocation, a result equally astonishing to the patient and her friends.<sup>112</sup>

As is shown above, using offerings to the demons together with medical treatment was certainly the common feature of indigenous medicine.<sup>113</sup> The Census Report of Cochin stated in 1901 that 'the astrologer, the exorcist and the physician' were 'all in attendance' at the sick-bed of a person: the astrologer divined the causes and prescribed propitiatory remedies; then the exorcist perform a ceremony to drive out the demons and spirits; and finally the physician or vaidyan treated the patient. According to the report, that was in

---

<sup>112</sup> Medical Mission, 1898, Box 7, TR, CWMA.

<sup>113</sup> Velu Pillai stated regarding the Ayurvedic medicine in 1940 that 'the work deals with subjects like Law, Ethics, Astrology, Prognostication, Sorcery, Phrenology, Toxicology and others and shows the relation each of these bears to the science of medicine'. Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.IV, p.228.

accordance with the common belief that 'so long as the patient is possessed, medicine can have no effect'.<sup>114</sup> However, the astrology had a dangerous effect as well at least in the view of the missionaries. Dr. Fells pointed out that:

Astrology is another superstition that does much mischief in many cases by declaring that a certain patient will die upon a fixed day. The astrologer often makes his assertion early in the sickness and is so implicitly believed by many that all hope is abandoned and no further effort made for the patient's recovery ...<sup>115</sup>

Another medical missionary reported a similar case. When Dr. T.S. Thomson visited 'a Sudra patient', he was told that 'the native physicians have prognosis that today he will die', and 'The materials were kept ready for burning the body'.<sup>116</sup>

Confronted with a number of 'inappropriate' treatments conducted by vaidyans, T.S. Thomson, a medical missionary, suggested in 1874 that the government should order the vaidyans to be 'at least trained in the elements of Surgery and Medicine'. He also offered some inducement in order to get these vaidyans put under instruction at the Neyyur Hospital. Although this attempt was not successful, due to 'their

---

<sup>114</sup> Census of India, 1901, Vol.XX, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press), p.24.

<sup>115</sup> Medical Mission, 1898, Box 7, TR, CWMA.

<sup>116</sup> Medical Mission, 1883, TR, Box 3, CWMA.

bigoted belief and their reliance in their shastrums',<sup>117</sup> the Travancore Government well recognized the problem. One government official wrote to T.S. Thomson that 'the quack Vythians are a curse to native society ... I know one or two native physicians, who practise successfully, but they are rare'.<sup>118</sup> Nagam Aiya also wrote that many vaidyans were 'mere quacks', and then pointed out that the decline of indigenous medicine was 'partly on account of the general indifference to our ancient sciences and partly also on account of the want of sufficient inducement and encouragement to the native practitioners at the hands of the influential and enlightened public who have begun to largely patronise European medicine'.<sup>119</sup>

In the meantime, as K.N. Panikkar has recently pointed out, this neglect was largely due to a belief in the superiority of Western culture, especially of scientific knowledge, which prevailed among not only government officials but also intellectuals in India.<sup>120</sup> However, this situation greatly changed towards the end of the nineteenth century. The development of nationalism was accompanied by a cultural awakening, and a movement which aimed at political authorities' recognition and patronage of indigenous medicine occurred. The All-India Ayurvedic Congress established in 1907

---

<sup>117</sup> Medical Mission, 1874, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>118</sup> The Missionary Conference, 1879, p.263.

<sup>119</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, part II, pp.553-4.

<sup>120</sup> K.N. Panikkar, 'Indigenous Medicine and Cultural Hegemony', Studies in History, 8,2, n.s., 1992, p.285.

was one of the results of this movement.<sup>121</sup> In Kerala, particularly in British Malabar, this movement was led by P.S. Variar, who was himself in practice at Kottakkal near Calicut. In 1902, he organized the Arya Vaidya Samajam for the revitalization of indigenous medicine.<sup>122</sup>

This movement, and Hindu revivalism more generally, was certainly one of the principal factors which influenced state policy towards indigenous medicine in Travancore. In 1889, the government opened an Ayurveda Patasala (School) in Trivandrum, and then it sanctioned a system of medical grants to vaidyans in 1895-96. The grants were generally given to those who passed out of the Ayurveda Patasala.<sup>123</sup> In 1917-18, an Ayurveda Department was constituted. One of the main functions of this department was the revision of the curricula of the Ayurveda Patasala 'on up-to-date scientific basis to suit modern requirements'. The department also appointed a lecturer in anatomy and physiology; established a botanical garden and Ayurveda hospitals; and opened an Ayurveda pharmacy.<sup>124</sup> Three years later, this Patasala was raised to the Ayurveda College, at which 'all the eight divisions' of indigenous medicine were taught in the course of five years. Thus, the Travancore state began to take more and more interest in indigenous medicine from the late nineteenth century. The government expenditure

---

<sup>121</sup> Bala, Imperialism and Medicine in Bengal, p.89.

<sup>122</sup> Panikkar, 'Indigenous Medicine', pp.295-397.

<sup>123</sup> TAR, 1896-97, p.161.

<sup>124</sup> TAR, 1930-31, p.176; TAR, 1917-18, p.66.



on indigenous medicine showed a sharp increase as Table 12 indicates.

TABLE 12: Government Expenditure on Medical Institutions (Rs.)

year	Government institutions (Western)	Grant-in-aid institutions (Western)	Vaidyasalas (indigenous)
1910-11	349,441	12,701	15,421
1915-16	473,133	11,346	15,800
1920-21	583,428	18,241	42,628
1924-25	674,241	17,244	45,431

Source: Travancore Administration Report for 1910-11, 1915-16, 1920-21 and 1924-25.

As a result, the number of patients treated by the aided vaidyans greatly increased. In 1930-31, 431,482 patients were treated in the grant-in-aid vaidyasalas, even though 1,975,328 were still treated in the government institutions which adopted Western medicine.<sup>125</sup>

Meanwhile, compared with the Travancore state, the Madras government was slow to recognize the usefulness of indigenous medicine. In 1921, the Madras government appointed a committee and ordered it to report on 'the question of the recognition and encouragement of the indigenous systems of medicine' in vogue in the Madras Presidency. This committee submitted its report in 1923, stating that the Indian systems were logical and scientific though they were not self-sufficient, especially in the surgical line. The committee then suggested that 'the followers of Indian medicine should study the

---

<sup>125</sup> TAR, 1930-31.

scientific methods of the West' and urged the need of the recognition and encouragement by the government. Regarding this respect, this committee pointed out the successful cases of Travancore and Cochin and asked that 'Is this not valuable prima facie evidence...?'<sup>126</sup> After accepting this report, the Madras government established a school of Indian Medicine in Madras in 1925.<sup>127</sup> But, this was thirty-six years after the Travancore government had established the Ayurveda School in Trivandrum.

Perhaps the most important reason why the Travancore state adopted the policy of encouraging indigenous medicine so early was that it was an 'orthodox Hindu state'. To the state, this policy had two obvious advantages. Firstly, the state could show its charitable feature through this medicine, which was rather economical in financial terms and could be given even to the 'conservative masses' especially in the rural areas.<sup>128</sup> Secondly, encouraging indigenous medicine was, at the same time, encouraging the Hindu culture, on which the Hindu state was established. In other words, helping the revival movements of Hinduism was undoubtedly one of the most appropriate functions of the Hindu ruler and the government. Therefore, it is not surprising that the state responded very quickly and very substantially to the revitalization movement in indigenous medicine.

---

<sup>126</sup> The Report of the Committee on the Indigenous Systems of Medicine, 1923, Part 1, pp.1,6,14.

<sup>127</sup> Madras District Gazetteers, Coimbatore, 1966, p.430.

<sup>128</sup> TAR, 1930-31, p.176; TAR, 1888-89, p.187.

Conclusion

In the area of medicine, the state and the missionaries maintained a very favourable relationship. Even in the 1930s, when the state adopted apparently anti-missionary policies, the Maharaja gave large donations to the Salvation Army and to the LMS. That was mainly because the medical activities of the missionaries were considerably useful to the state, which was keen to change itself to a modern state and also to show its charitable feature to its people. Both the LMS and the Salvation Army sent well-qualified doctors; started medical classes; and established well-equipped and highly-reputed hospitals and dispensaries, sometimes at the areas which needed special medical relief such as that for malaria. Moreover, to the state which had to respond to growing public demand for medical attention, the mission institutions were indispensable.

However, in spite of their quality and usefulness, the scale of the mission institutions was far smaller than that of the government institutions. In the year 1900-01, for example, the government institutions treated more than six times as many patients as the LMS's. Moreover, as a result of the development of indigenous medicine encouraged by the state, more and more patients came to have an opportunity to be treated at the non-mission institutions. This situation was, as we have seen, very different from that of education. The missionaries still educated a great proportion of pupils even in the 1930s. Thus, the state did not consider the

religious influence of the mission institutions as seriously as in the case of education. The criticisms from the higher castes against the medical missions were far less than those against mission schools either. Moreover, the missionaries apparently did not succeeded in converting the higher castes through their medical activities as they intended to. Thus, the mission medical institutions were far more useful than harmful to the state, which regarded giving 'charity' to its people through medical relief as one of the main functions of the state. Under these circumstances, the state and the missionaries maintained more favourable relationship in the area of medicine than in that of education.

By contrast, the Hindu state almost completely ignored indigenous medicine until the late nineteenth century. However, the ideological change, especially the emergence of Hindu revivalism, greatly affected government policy in the area of indigenous medicine. At the time when the British almost totally ignored the revitalization movements in indigenous medicine, the Travancore state paid great attention to them. Thus, in 1889 the Ayurvedic School was opened in Trivandrum, which was undoubtedly one of the earliest institutions of this kind in India, and after that the state rather enthusiastically contributed to the development of the indigenous medicine. This was done mainly because of its eagerness to show its charitable feature to its people and also its readiness to adopt 'traditional' Hindu culture as the work of a Hindu state.

## CHAPTER 5

## THE STATE, THE MISSIONARIES AND THE LOWER CASTES

Introduction

There is no doubt that the circumstances surrounding the lower castes in Travancore changed enormously in the late nineteenth century. They became increasingly assertive and demanded equal opportunities for education and more government jobs as well as the recognition of higher ritual status from the state. It may be true that some castes, such as the Nadars, started their efforts for uplift in the first half of the nineteenth century or even earlier. But the movements in the late nineteenth century were very different from previous ones at least in terms of the scale on which they operated and the impact they had upon the society and politics. Even the lowest castes, such as the Pulayas and the Parayas, who had formerly been obedient agricultural labourers, became increasingly assertive. How, then, did these changes affected the attitudes and interrelationship of the state and the missionaries? How were the changes among the lower castes related to other changes, such as the non-interference policy of the British, which we have examined in the previous chapters? To investigate these questions is one of the aims of this chapter.

As we have seen in the last two chapters, the missionaries

and the state co-operated rather than clashed in Travancore. It is clear that missionary activities, and especially the continuing conversion to Christianity which occurred as a consequence, were perceived as great threats to the Hindu state. Accordingly, the state sometimes adopted measures to reduce missionary influence. However, the state did not always pay attention to the lower castes, one of the main areas of missionary concern, nor were the motives behind its policies towards these castes always the same. Thus, to examine their relationship in the area of the uplift of lower castes is another purpose of this chapter.

#### Caste Disabilities in the Nineteenth Century

Disabilities and restrictions relating to the caste system in Travancore can be classified according to four categories. That is to say, (1) restrictions caused by tindal or caste pollution, (2) other restrictions including the breast-cloth restriction, which seem not to have been directly related to tindal, (3) forced labour called uriyam, and (4) slavery. Many of these disabilities and restrictions had been abolished by the late nineteenth century largely due to pressure from the missionaries and the Madras government as well as the agitations of the people themselves.

Slavery was abolished in Travancore in June 1855, and the lowest castes such as Pulayas and Parayas were legally emancipated, though their social and economic condition remained largely the same at least until the late nineteenth

century. Forced labour (uriyam) was also discontinued by the 1860s, when the government created a public works department which introduced waged labour. Before that, uriyam had been used by the state mainly for repairing roads and public buildings and for acquiring provisions for festivals and touring officials.<sup>1</sup> There were also many other disabilities and restrictions which seem not to have been directly related to tindal. For example, ornaments worn by the Pulayas had to be 'no more valuable than brass or beads', and umbrellas and shoes were not permitted.<sup>2</sup> Also, the lower castes were debarred from the use of any but coarse clothes; they were not at liberty to keep milch cows; and they could not use oil mills.<sup>3</sup> There were restrictions regarding houses as well. In one case, several houses of the native Christians from the lowest castes were pulled down by the government on the ground that 'they were too good for such people [ex-slaves] to live in'.<sup>4</sup> But these restrictions were also gradually abolished. As we have seen, the dress restrictions on the Shanars were largely, though not completely, removed by the proclamation issued in July 1859.

However, the disabilities directly relating to tindal were

---

<sup>1</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics in Travancore (New Delhi: Vikas, 1976), pp.56-7.

<sup>2</sup> Samuel Mateer, The Land of Charity: A Descriptive Account of Travancore and its People (London: John Snow, 1871), p.45.

<sup>3</sup> P.K.K. Menon, History of Freedom Movement in Kerala (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1972), p.280.

<sup>4</sup> Samuel Mateer, Native Life in Travancore (London: W.H. Allen, 1883), p.313.

the most powerful and persistent. As is well-known, there was a notion of unapproachability, or distance pollution, in Kerala. That is to say, caste pollution or tindal was transmitted not only by touching but also by approaching within a certain distance. For example, 'a Shanar must remain twelve steps away from a Nair, a Pulayan sixty-six steps ...'.<sup>5</sup> Due to this notion of tindal, the lower castes were not able to use public roads freely; were not permitted to enter market places and courts; and were excluded from most schools and government jobs.

The first notable step of the Travancore government concerning these disabilities was taken in 1870. As we have seen in Chapter Two, after the assault case of Rev. W. Lee, an LMS missionary, Sir T. Madava Row wrote to the judges of the High Court, which was then called 'Sadar Court', that the courts should be made accessible to all classes. Before that time, it was almost impossible for the lower castes to present claims to courts due to this inaccessibility. 'If a low-caste man happened to be a witness ... his evidence was taken by a Gumastha [agent] deputed for the purpose with the aid of an intermediate peon; owing to the distance neither the question nor the reply would be audible or intelligible'.<sup>6</sup> But, although there must have been a number of obstacles,<sup>7</sup> the

---

<sup>5</sup> Mateer, The Land of Charity, p.32.

<sup>6</sup> Menon, History of Freedom Movement, p.281.

<sup>7</sup> For example, claims were often left unprocessed 'so that suitors are tired out and it becomes not worth their while to continue'. Mateer, Native Life, p.374.



lower castes began to use the judicial system, and the rejection for the lower castes to enter the courts sometimes resulted in punishment. In 1894 the British Resident reported that a sub-magistrate was fined for having kept a Pulaya complainant outside the room during the trial.<sup>8</sup> Missionaries, especially those of the LMS, utilized this newly-acquired right positively. They frequently helped their converts to bring cases to the courts. In 1872, for example, 'Pulayar Christians' were assaulted by the higher castes for entering a public market. This case was finally brought before the High Court in Trivandrum after trial in two inferior courts.<sup>9</sup> The missionaries continued to help their converts in this area.<sup>10</sup> In 1907 a high-caste member of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly insisted that missionaries were using attendance in courts as well as education and medical relief for the purpose of converting the Pulayas.<sup>11</sup>

Along with the permission to enter the courts, Madava Row also issued a circular throwing open most of the public roads in the state to all castes and communities.<sup>12</sup> However, this

---

<sup>8</sup> Grigg to Ch. Sec., 11 May 1894, in G.O. No.456,457, Foreign Dept., NAI.

<sup>9</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1872, pp.9-10.

<sup>10</sup> Gladstone has also dealt with similar cases. J.W. Gladstone, Protestant Christianity and People's Movements in Kerala: A Study of Christian Mass Movements in Relation to Neo-Hindu Socio-Religious Movements in Kerala, 1850-1936 (Trivandrum: Seminary Publications, 1984), pp.176-7.

<sup>11</sup> SMPAP, 3rd Meeting, 1907, p.111.

<sup>12</sup> 'The Pulayas of Travancore', Church Missionary Intelligencer, April 1883, p.202.

order, which was no more than a memorandum addressed to the higher officials, was 'almost a dead letter'.<sup>13</sup> Regarding this matter, a CMS missionary wrote in 1883 that:

In some places they [Pulayas] are not allowed on the public roads, in others they are driven from them to seek shelter in the jungle on the approach of a high caste man ... They are not allowed to enter any public markets ... In ordinary cases they are not allowed nearer to the cutcherry [government office] than from 40 to 100 yards.<sup>14</sup>

Under these circumstances, the Travancore government published a circular in July 1884. In this circular, the government itself admitted that 'Pooliers and other humble classes still find difficulty in getting free access to the public Courts and Cutcherries and not infrequently obstructed in the use of the public highways and markets'. It declared that all these places were now to be 'open alike to all classes' and added that any public officer who did not comply with this order would 'be visited with the severest displeasure of Government'.<sup>15</sup> It is not clear why the government published this circular at that time. But there is no doubt that there

---

<sup>13</sup> A.F. Painter, 'The Outcastes in Travancore', Madras Church Missionary Record, Nov. 1884, p.322.

<sup>14</sup> 'The Pulayas in Travancore', Church Missionary Intelligencer, April 1883, pp.218-9.

<sup>15</sup> TGG, 29 July 1884.

was some pressure from outside. A.F. Painter, a CMS missionary, stated that 'In 1883 [sic] in response to my appeal the Roads, Markets and Law Courts were opened to them'.<sup>16</sup>

This circular had a very strong impact upon the higher castes. According to A.F. Painter, 'They [high-caste Hindus] appeared to think it impossible that the Dewan should issue such an order'.<sup>17</sup> Opposition to the lower castes entering the market places seems to have been particularly great. Painter continued that 'I heard a respectable Tamil Brahman telling some Pulayas that they would have their heads broken ... if they attempted to gain admittance'.<sup>18</sup> It is not clear how effective this circular was, but there is no doubt that these disabilities gradually diminished towards the end of the nineteenth century even though they still remained in many places. In 1897 an LMS missionary pointed out that 'Pulayans may now be seen working in or near Brahmin streets - a thing impossible a few years ago'.<sup>19</sup>

#### Nagam Aiya's View: Conversion and the Hindu State

Thus, in the nineteenth century, some caste disabilities disappeared. Certainly, the Travancore government played an

---

<sup>16</sup> Copy of Memorandum, by A.F. Painter, 30 Mar. 1908, Travancore and Cochin, No.56, CMSA.

<sup>17</sup> Madras Church Missionary Record, Nov. 1884, p.323.

<sup>18</sup> Ibid.

<sup>19</sup> Trivandrum City Mission, 1897, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

important role in these improvements, but it did so largely under pressure from the Madras government and the missionaries. From the late nineteenth century, however, the state began to pay more and more attention to the amelioration of the conditions of the lower castes. That was partly because the government came to regard conversion of the lowest castes to Christianity as a great threat to the stability of the Hindu state. The government's view on this matter can be clearly seen in Nagam Aiya's statements. As we have seen in Chapter 1, V. Nagam Aiya was born and bred in Travancore and spent all his career in the Travancore service. He was 'persona grata' with the Maharaja, who was eager to make him Dewan.<sup>20</sup> In addition, his view was expressed in the Census Report and was repeated in the State Manual as well after about twelve years, both of which were, in a sense, official publications. In the Census Report of 1891, he stated regarding the Christian missionaries that:

But for these missionaries, these humble orders of Hindu society will for ever remain unraised... the heroism of raising the low from the slough of degradation and debasement was an element of civilization unknown to ancient India... our organization as the chief caste of the Hindu community does not provide systematic help, or means of relief to them... The credit of this

---

<sup>20</sup> J. Andrew, 'Confidential Note', Letter No.132, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC; Annexure to G.O. No.433, 431, 25 July 1905, MPP, OIOC.

philanthropy of going to the houses of the low, the distressed and the dirty, and putting shoulder to the wheel of depraved humanity, belongs to the Englishman. I do not think the Brahmins, or even the high caste non-Brahmins, can claim this credit.<sup>21</sup>

He tried to persuade high-caste Hindus to pay more attention to the lower castes in his statement, and he did so because he was seriously concerned about the growth of the Christian population. In his Manual published in 1906, he stated that 'There is no doubt that, as time goes on, these neglected classes will be completely absorbed into the Christian fold'.<sup>22</sup> Then, regarding the reason for this concern, he insisted that people in Travancore were not homogenous and that the conversion movements would destroy stability of the society. He continued in his Manual that:

Such a state of things [conversion of all the neglected classes], however, must add to the difficulties of administration in a country like ours which is quite unlike England or America or China where the Governments have to deal only with peoples homogenous in thought, race and religion ... we have not one nation but a congeries of nations, cut up into innumerable races,

---

<sup>21</sup> Report of the Census of Travancore for 1891, Vol.I, Report (Madras: Addison, 1894), pp.471-2.

<sup>22</sup> Nagam Aiya, The Travancore State Manual (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1906), vol.II, p.116.

sects and castes with conflicting instincts and interests.<sup>23</sup>

There can be no doubt that his greatest concern was to maintain the status quo or the regime which provided privileges for the high-caste Hindus. But, in his view, the regime was very fragile at that time. The percentage of the Hindu population was small in Travancore, compared with neighbouring parts of south India, and Nagam Aiya, who was also the Census Commissioner from 1875 to 1891, well recognized this fact. He wrote in his Manual that 'In Travancore the Hindus form 69 per cent of the total population; in Mysore 92.5 per cent; ... Madras 89 per cent; and in Hyderabad 89 per cent'.<sup>24</sup> Then he stated that 'the conservative Hindu State of Travancore is much less Hindu than even the Mahomedan State of Hyderabad'.<sup>25</sup> In addition, conversion to Christianity was continuing, while the percentage of the Hindu population was almost constantly diminishing. Syrian Christians and other communities came to be increasingly politicized towards the end of the nineteenth century, criticizing the privileged position of the higher castes. These facts undoubtedly made him aware of the fragility of the Hindu regime. It is no wonder that a sense of crisis emerged that continuous conversion to Christianity

---

<sup>23</sup> Ibid.

<sup>24</sup> Nagam Aiya, Manual, vol.II, p.115.

<sup>25</sup> Ibid.

might change not only the population ratio but also the very nature of the state.

There is no doubt that growing Hindu revivalism all over India influenced his views. In north India, cow protection along with resistance to Christian missionaries and other issues attracted a great deal of attention from Hindus in the 1880s and 1890s.<sup>26</sup> In Travancore, some Hindus began to open reading rooms and lecture halls in the 1880s as a part of Hindu revival movement. Thus, in 1889, an organization called the Hindu Swadharana Sabha was formed in Trivandrum by some educated Hindus for the revival of Hinduism.<sup>27</sup> Hindu preachers and philosophers came to visit Travancore. Swami Vivekananda's visit in 1896 was, in this respect, one of the most influential events.<sup>28</sup>

Some of the central ideas of Vivekananda, son of a leading Attorney of the High Court of Bengal and one of the leaders of the Ramakrishna Movement to 'revivify Hinduism from within',<sup>29</sup> were a justification for the principle of caste which could break down 'cruel, cold and heartless' competition in the European countries; and a defence of this same caste system by criticizing its evil aspects such as untouchability

---

<sup>26</sup> John R. McLane, 'The Early Congress, Hindu Populism, and the Wider Society', in Richard Sisson and Stanley Wolpert (eds), Congress and Indian Nationalism (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988), pp.55-7.

<sup>27</sup> K. Jayaprasad, RSS and Hindu Nationalism: Inroads in a Leftist Stronghold (New Delhi: Deep and Deep, 1991), p.123.

<sup>28</sup> J.W. Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, pp.206-11.

<sup>29</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932), pp.354-5.

and privileges of the higher castes.<sup>30</sup> Vivekananda, accordingly, showed much interest in the notoriously rigid caste system of Kerala and even called it 'a veritable lunatic asylum of India'.<sup>31</sup> Not surprisingly, he was greatly concerned with the Izhavas' movements. In 1891, he met Dr. Palpu, one of the Izhava leaders, in Bangalore and encouraged his efforts.<sup>32</sup> He also contacted higher castes during his visit in Travancore. He met 'leading gentlemen of Trivandrum' including the tutor to the First Prince, Professor Sundarama Iyer, and, according to the Census Report, 'all were struck by his intelligence and profound scholarship and by his note of greatness'.<sup>33</sup> Thus, his ideas, particularly his visit to Travancore, undoubtedly affected not only the Izhavas but also a number of higher castes who tried to defend the caste system as well as Hinduism. The above Census Report stated with apparent enthusiasm that 'The ideas of Sri Ramakrishna and Swami Vivekananda have permeated the masses largely in Middle Travancore where they have become almost household objects of worship and the influence is gradually spreading ... Though the movement is entirely spiritual, it is having indirect

---

<sup>30</sup> Forrester, Duncan B., Caste and Christianity: Attitudes and Politics on Caste of Anglo-Saxon Protestant Missions in India (London: Curzon Press, 1979), pp.159-60.

<sup>31</sup> V.T. Samuel, One Caste, One Religion, One God: A Study of Sree Narayana Guru (New Delhi: Sterling Publishers, 1977), p.23.

<sup>32</sup> Ibid., p.59.

<sup>33</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, p.355.



social effects also'.<sup>34</sup>

In any case, there is no doubt that these statements of Nagam Aiya, who was one of the most important officials of the Travancore government, largely represented the general view of the Maharaja and the government. In fact, shortly after Nagam Aiya expressed his views, the Travancore government adopted some anti-missionary policies, as we have seen in Chapter 2, and also began to pay greater attention to the uplift of the lower castes, as will be seen shortly.

#### Attitudes of the Landlords

We have seen that the state did not pay much attention to the conversion of the lower castes until the late nineteenth century. But what were the attitudes of the landlords who employed the lowest castes such as Pulayas and Parayas as agricultural labourers towards conversion of their employees? Did the lowest castes become more independent after their conversion and come to reject their hereditary occupations?

It is true that some converts came to refuse to work on Sundays, and the higher castes, not surprisingly, opposed this new practice. J. Knowles, an LMS missionary, stated in 1898 that 'they [converts] are nearly always abused whenever they refused to work on the Sabbath or when they return to work on Mondays after staying away on Sunday'.<sup>35</sup> Another LMS

---

<sup>34</sup> Ibid., p.356.

<sup>35</sup> Quilon, 1898, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

missionary stated in 1875 that 'These Sudras seem to fear that, if these poor people remain steadfast in Christianity, they would not be content with small wages they got from their masters, but may seek to get their livelihood from other quarters'.<sup>36</sup> However, it is doubtful that conversion to Christianity substantially changed the social and economic relations between the high-caste landlords and the low-caste labourers. Most of the low-caste labourers seem not to have changed their occupation after their conversion, despite the fears of the landlords. In about 1896, A.F. Painter of the CMS stated that the Pulaya Christians in his district were 'practically the slaves of their masters'.<sup>37</sup> I.H. Hacker, an LMS missionary, similarly stated in 1906 that 'The Christian people of this District are for the most part the poorest people ... They are poor agricultural labourers under Sudra masters'.<sup>38</sup> Nor did the missionaries themselves seem to have positively desired the change. A CMS missionary stated in 1883 that:

The great majority of our converts have remained at the work in which they were engaged previously, and it is most desirable that they should do so. It is idleness and pride, not labour, which is dishonouring.<sup>39</sup>

---

<sup>36</sup> Neyoor Home Church, 1875, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

<sup>37</sup> 'Tiruwella', Proceedings of the CMS, 1895-96, p.277.

<sup>38</sup> Pareychaley District, 1906, Box 8, TR, CWMA.

<sup>39</sup> 'The Pulayas of Travancore', Church Missionary Intelligencer, Apr. 1883, p.222.

Under these circumstances, some landlords even welcomed the conversion of their labourers. As early as 1858, H. Andrew, a CMS missionary wrote that 'The Christian slave has a high market value in the eyes of his heathen or Syrian master. His honesty and diligence make a great saving in a year. I have heard this from more than one master.'<sup>40</sup> J. Knowles, an LMS missionary, also expressed a similar view in 1885 that 'In several instances heathen masters are encouraging their labourers to become Christians as they say they are so much more trustworthy and industrious in consequence'.<sup>41</sup> As will be seen later, one of the greatest fears of the high-caste Hindus and the state was that the lowest castes would reject their hereditary occupation, and the missionaries were certainly aware of this fear. Undoubtedly, it was much more advantageous for the missionaries to gain as many converts as possible by persuading them to remain at their work than to lose the good relationship with the state and the landlords. In any case, conversion of the lowest castes itself clearly did not have much influence on the Travancore government. In other words, as long as they remained obedient labourers, the state did not pay much attention to their conversion before the late nineteenth century.

---

<sup>40</sup> H. Andrew, 'Cottayam District', Madras Church Missionary Record, Nov. 1858, p.325.

<sup>41</sup> Quilon, 1885, TR, Box 8, CWMA.

Political Awakening of Various Communities

Political awakening, which largely emerged from the late nineteenth century among various communities, was one of the principal factors which forced the state to pay attention to the lower castes. The lower castes such as the Izhavas and the Pulayas became increasingly assertive, and the state became increasingly unable to ignore their demands.

The Izhavas' movements were some of the strongest and the most influential. The religious reform movement led by Sri Narayana Guru (c.1856-1928) gave identity and self-respect to this economically emerging community. Their association called Sri Narayana Dharma Paripalana Yogam (SNDP Yogam), which was established by Narayana Guru and other Izhava leaders in 1903, promoted integration of the caste, and, at the same time, became a powerful political body which presented their demands to the government.<sup>42</sup> Similarly, Syrian Christians became educationally and economically advanced and increasingly assertive. Their greatest concern was the virtual monopoly of government offices by high-caste Hindus. Their demands were frequently expressed in several newspapers established largely by Syrians around the 1880s.<sup>43</sup> For example, Kerala Mitram, a Cochin-based paper edited by a Jacobite Syrian, stated in 1882 that 'the fact that there are only twenty-five Syrians among 1,424 public servants ... is a proof of the Sirkar's apathy

---

<sup>42</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.208-10.

<sup>43</sup> Ibid., pp.128-9.

towards this community'.<sup>44</sup> The Nayars also became politically active. The Malayali Sabha was founded in about 1884 largely with a view to encourage education, to reform their matrilineal joint family system; and to introduce land reform. It also played a leading role in circulation of a petition called the Malayali Memorial, which was submitted to the Maharaja in January 1891. In this memorial, they tried to show the advantageous position of 'foreign Hindus' or non-Malayali Brahmins in the government service. They also founded the Nayar Service Society in 1914.<sup>45</sup>

In addition, Muslims in Travancore also became considerably assertive. The first Muslim newspaper in Travancore was published in 1905 by Vakkom M. Abdul Khader Moulvi, a Koranic scholar from Quilon. In 1915, a Muslim association, the Lejnathul Mohamadiya Sabha, was formed in Alleppey.<sup>46</sup> Muslims also frequently expressed their demands in the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly. In 1912, one Muslim member of the Assembly referred to their backwardness in education and demanded that (1) compulsory education should be enforced among the Muslims as a tentative measure; (2) Arabic should be taught to enable Muslim pupils to understand the Koran; (3) Muslim inspectors should be appointed with a view to create a desire among the

---

<sup>44</sup> Kerala Mitram, 1 Feb. 1882, NNR.

<sup>45</sup> Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance, pp.166-9; Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, p.224.

<sup>46</sup> James Lazer Chiriyankandath, 'Social Change and the Development of 'Modern' Politics in Travancore: From the Late Nineteenth Century to 1938', Ph.D. Thesis, University of London (1985), p.82.

Muslims for education, trade, agriculture and industry; and (4) poor Muslim students should be exempted from the payment of fees.<sup>47</sup> The Travancore government clearly made considerable efforts to respond to these demands. As far as Arabic teaching was concerned, some schools in Muslim localities adopted this. In 1917 a nominated Member of the Assembly stated that 'Wherever Arabic Munshis [language teachers] had been attached to the elementary schools, they had attracted Muslim boys'.<sup>48</sup> In 1918, also at the Assembly, one Muslim member expressed 'the gratitude of the Muslim community' for government efforts for their education.<sup>49</sup>

Thus, these main castes and communities became greatly politicized from the late nineteenth century, and their movements also influenced the lowest castes such as the Pulayas and the Parayas. The Pulayas' movement was largely led by Ayyan Kali (c.1863-1941), who was born to a Pulaya family at Venganoor near Trivandrum. In the late nineteenth century, he began to organize the Pulayas. His first attempt was to claim the right to use public roads. He and his followers forced their way on to the roads for which they had been virtually excluded despite the government circular of 1884. There is no doubt, however, that the Pulayas gradually won this right, and Ayyan Kali's activities came to concentrate mainly on the right of receiving education in the 1900s. He

---

<sup>47</sup> SMPAP, 8th Session, 1912, p.84.

<sup>48</sup> SMPAP, 13th Session, 1917, p.126.

<sup>49</sup> SMPAP, 14th Session, 1918, p.53.

appealed to the Pulayas around Venganoor, his birth place, to refuse to work for the Nayar landlords until they permitted Pulaya children to enter the schools, and the 'strike' was successful.<sup>50</sup>

As we have seen in Chapter 3, the Educational Code of 1909-10 theoretically removed almost all restrictions regarding the admission of the lowest castes into government schools. Ayyan Kali tried to take full advantage of this new code and escorted a Pulaya girl to a school, and this caused a riot between Nayars and Pulayas. This riot spread to many villages nearby. Undoubtedly, the Travancore government was seriously concerned about this riot and as a result came to pay more attention to the conditions of the lowest castes. A year after this riot, Ayyan Kali was nominated to the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly.<sup>51</sup>

In 1905, Ayyan Kali founded a Sadhu Jana Paripalana Sangham (Association for the Welfare of the Poor) with the help of some Nayars. W.S. Hunt, a CMS missionary, stated regarding the Sangham that:

it [the association] teaches them that they have rights, and that, if they boldly claim them, those rights must be granted. Its claims do not stop short of absolute 'equality of opportunity' with other castes, plus certain privileges to make up for past and present

---

<sup>50</sup> Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, pp.265-9.

<sup>51</sup> Ibid., pp.269-70.

disadvantages.<sup>52</sup>

One of the main activities of the Sangham was to organize meetings on 'some hill-side or maidan'. At these meetings, the leaders addressed the audiences about their rights and duties. They urged them to fulfil the duties of 'cleanliness, temperance, self-control, and the duty of sending their children to school'.<sup>53</sup>

At first, Parayas and Christians from the lowest castes joined this Sangham. But they soon established separate associations of their own as they felt themselves 'neglected by the leaders of that Association'. Thus, some Parayas established a Brahma Pratyaksha Sadhu Jana Paripalana Sangham. One of the leaders was a man called Kandan Kumaran Parayan. They demanded that schools should be established for their children and that they should be employed in the lower grades of government service like Pulayas. The low-caste Christians also started a separate association called Christian Sadhu Jana Sangham. Clearly, this association had some connection with the CMS. It was established in June 1913 at the 'Diocesan Room' of the CMS in Kottayam. The purposes of the association were almost the same as those of others. Some of their aims were 'to watch and further the poor Christians' interests, to represent their grievances to Government, and to improve their social position by education and other means'. Their leader,

---

<sup>52</sup> W.S. Hunt, 'The Uplifting of the Depressed', Church Missionary Review, Feb. 1914, p.113.

<sup>53</sup> Ibid.



Saradan Solomon, was also nominated to the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly.<sup>54</sup>

Thus, largely from the 1900s, the movements of the lowest castes became increasingly active and widespread. W.S. Hunt stated regarding the movements in 1914 that:

This is really a very remarkable phenomenon and must seem especially striking to those who knew Travancore ten, or even five, years ago. The dumb millions have become vocal, the hitherto inert mass has become animate, the depressed are striving to shake off their depression. When the unrest was acute, six or seven years ago, we used to think that it was confined ... to the comparative few on top, and that the millions beneath knew and cared nothing for it all. But to-day, and in secluded Travancore, they do know and care and are themselves heaving in unrest.<sup>55</sup>

Thus, people in the lowest sections of the society became widely politicized through religious and communal associations of various kinds. The number of their associations increased rapidly. In 1915, one member of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly stated that there were 126 associations of Pulayas alone.<sup>56</sup> Under these circumstances, the Travancore government came to

---

<sup>54</sup> Ibid., pp.113-4.

<sup>55</sup> Hunt, 'The Uplifting', p.114.

<sup>56</sup> SMPAP, 11th Session, 1915, pp.117-8.

be seriously concerned about their movements. One of the most important duties of Sir P. Rajagopalachari (Dewan, 1907-1914) was to cope with these movements.

#### The State and the Lowest Castes: Rajagopalachari's View

Preventing conversion to Christianity was certainly one of the principal reasons why the Travancore government began to pay attention to the lowest castes. But this was not a sole reason. The state was also greatly concerned with the stability of the social and economic order, which the lowest castes supported as agricultural labourers. The state desired that the lowest castes should remain in their position and maintain the existing relationship with the higher castes. P. Rajagopalachari, the Dewan well-known for his efforts for the uplift of the lower castes, stated to the Pulayas of the Sadhu Jana Paripalana Sangham in 1914 that:

you are employed very largely in the most important industry of the State, that of agriculture... while, of course, you should strive to better yourselves, you should also strive, as far as possible, to keep well with the other communities in the State.<sup>57</sup>

On another occasion, he also stated to the audience of the same Sangham that:

---

<sup>57</sup> Addresses to the Dewan of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914)

You will have to continue to earn your livelihood hereafter, as you have been doing hitherto, and there is no way of earning an honest livelihood except by hard work. Do not relax your habits of hard work. Also continue to maintain your amicable relations with the higher castes who are mainly your employers.<sup>58</sup>

He also stated to the Parayas that they 'should take care not to come into collision with any of their employers'.<sup>59</sup> Thus, encouraging the lowest castes to be obedient agricultural labourers was evidently one of the greatest concerns of the Dewan.

Migration by the lowest castes was one of the developments which landlords and the state most feared. In 1916, one member of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly stated that 'The rate of wages [of the depressed classes] was very low and that led to the migration of workmen to other countries'.<sup>60</sup> He then pointed out that '29 percent of the arable land in the State was still left unregistered' and urged the government to register the land in the name of the 'depressed classes'.<sup>61</sup> There is little doubt that giving a certain amount of land was one of the measures to prevent migration and other problems such as riots and strikes, and this policy seems to have been

---

<sup>58</sup> Ibid., p.111.

<sup>59</sup> Addresses to the Dewan, p.97.

<sup>60</sup> SMPAP, 12th Session, 1916, p.119.

<sup>61</sup> Ibid.

successful at least until 1931. The Census Report of 1931 stated that 'Most of them [the depressed classes] are field labourers dependent on others and are disinclined to leave their home and seek occupations in distant places'.<sup>62</sup>

That was the reason why the government paid attention not only to the low-caste Hindus but also to the Christian converts. It is true that Rajagopalachari preferred Hindu Pulayas to their Christian converts. In addressing to the Hindu Pulayas, he remarked that:

Your desire to reform yourselves and improve your status, without going out of the Hindu fold, naturally very much appeals to a Hindu like myself... I can find nothing in Hinduism, as I understand it, to justify the treatment now accorded by it to large communities like yours.<sup>63</sup>

But he also declared that 'So far as the Government are concerned, we make no distinction between Christian and Hindu Pulayas'.<sup>64</sup> Indeed, as we have seen, Saradan Solomon, a low-caste Christian, was nominated to the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly, and various benefits including free primary education and scholarship were given to the Christians as well.

---

<sup>62</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, Part I, p.438.

<sup>63</sup> Addresses to the Dewan, p.30.

<sup>64</sup> Ibid., p.129.

Meanwhile, Rajagopalachari tried to control the lowest castes, Hindu or Christian, through their leaders. That is to say, he first conciliated some leaders and then persuaded people to follow such leaders. His relationship with Ayyan Kali provides one example of this. He nominated the Pulaya leader to the Popular Assembly in 1912 and maintained contact with him. Undoubtedly, various concessions from the government to the lowest castes, such as assignment of land were used with a view to strengthen this relationship and the authority of the leaders over the lowest castes. To keep the lowest castes loyal through amenable leaders was thus one of his strategies. The Dewan told the Hindu Pulayas, in persuading them to follow Ayyan Kali, that:

It is vital, therefore, that you should ... choose your leaders carefully, and trust and follow them after you have chosen them. In Ayyan Kali you have a leader who is well worth following. I have known him for the last four years, both as a member of the Popular Assembly and otherwise. I have had long conversations with him regarding the difficult problems connected with your advancement, and I have come to the conclusion that he is a leader whom his community would do well to follow.<sup>65</sup>

He repeated similar statements to the Parayas and the

---

<sup>65</sup> Addresses to the Dewan, p.30.

Christians and tried to persuade them to follow their leaders. On the other hand, the leaders of the lowest castes, particularly Ayyan Kali, undoubtedly tried to take advantage of the situation and used the government and some higher castes in order to achieve their own purposes. Ayyan Kali seems to have maintained favourable relation with the Travancore government and was also closely associated with the activities of the Brahma Nishta Matam Chit Sabha founded in 1901 by a Hindu revivalist Sadananda Swami, who was greatly concerned with the conversion of the lower castes to Christianity.<sup>66</sup>

In addition to these leaders, Rajagopalachari regarded the missionaries as proper authorities whom the low-caste Christians should follow. He urged the Christians to 'obey the church authorities'.<sup>67</sup> There is no doubt that the missionaries were considered suitable for this purpose at that time. The Maharaja himself wrote to the CMS in 1917 that 'it is the example and teaching of their pastors that have made the Christians a loyal and law-abiding community'.<sup>68</sup> As to the attitudes of the missionaries, they seem to have become very obedient to the political authorities of the native states at that time. This was at least partly because the British, as we have seen in Chapter 2, became increasingly

---

<sup>66</sup> K. Jayaprasad, RSS and Hindu Nationalism: Inroads in a Leftist Stronghold (New Delhi: Deep and Deep, 1991), p.123-4; Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, p.266.

<sup>67</sup> Addresses to the Dewan., p.130.

<sup>68</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record, vol.27, Nov. 1917.

reluctant, from the late nineteenth century onwards, in intervening in social and religious customs and tried to distance themselves from the missionaries. The following statement of a missionary of the Irish Presbyterian Church made in a missionary conference, in which the LMS and the CMS participated, seems to represent the general opinion of the missionaries at the time. He stated in 1901 that:

Missionaries of experience and tact will remember that the rulers of native states are possessed of great authority in their own dominions, and should be treated with the greatest respect; and that any favour which is sought from them is more likely to be granted if they are applied to direct, than if an attempt is made to bring external pressure to bear upon them.<sup>69</sup>

Thus, the more reluctant the British authorities became to help the missionaries, the more they had to rely on the Travancore state. In theory, the state could deport the missionaries. The Maharaja had power to permit missionaries to reside in his territory, and not all the native states tolerated missionary activities.<sup>70</sup> Moreover, as anti-missionary feelings grew especially among the high-caste Hindus who were inspired by Hindu revivalism and Indian

---

<sup>69</sup> Report of a Conference of the Foreign Missionary Societies of Great Britain and Ireland (London: Butler and Tanner, 1901), p.90.

<sup>70</sup> Ibid.

nationalism, the missionaries had to rely on the state for the continuance of their activities as well as for their own safety. A disturbance which broke out early in 1908 must have convinced the missionaries of this necessity. The disturbance was caused by agitators who called for 'Swadeshi, or "Boycott" of all things foreign, and especially of Christianity as a foreign religion'.<sup>71</sup> During this agitation, a riot occurred in which 'some damage' was done to a police station. H.T. Wills, an LMS missionary, wrote that 'They [the rioters] had the chance to burn down our bungalows and destroy our work'. Although the Travancore government banned all open-air preaching for two months, the disturbance still continued after the two months had passed.<sup>72</sup> In a sense, this case suggests that the Travancore government could ban missionary activities if it felt that there was a proper reason, and that it was not totally impossible to find such a reason because there was growing anti-missionary feeling. There can be no doubt that the missionaries needed to become more sensitive to the mood of the Travancore government at that time. In any case, the missionaries must have become much more amenable towards the Travancore state in the early twentieth century than in the mid-nineteenth century, when they aggressively criticized existing social customs and government policies by using pressure from the Madras government. In return the state expected the missionaries to persuade the low-caste Christians

---

<sup>71</sup> Report of 1908 & 1909, 31 Oct. 1909, H.T. Wills, TR, Box 9, CWMA.

<sup>72</sup> Ibid.



to be obedient to the existing social, economic and political order.

### Missionaries and the Caste System

The social and political awakening of the lowest castes, particularly in the 1900s and 1910s, influenced the policies of the missionaries towards the caste system in the church as well. The CMS had been more reluctant than the LMS to renounce the caste system in its own churches, and, therefore, it was faced with greater protests from low-caste Christians.

The CMS missionaries began to establish contact with Hindus in 1834. Before that, their activities concentrated on the Syrian Christians. But it was not until 1851 that work among the Pulayas was systematically commenced at the suggestion of the Rev. T.G. Ragland, the Secretary of the CMS in Madras. During his journey through Travancore, 'he was much struck with the large number and wretched state of the Pulayas, and he at once suggested that something should be done',<sup>73</sup> and thus their work began. However, the missionaries did not greatly welcome the conversion of the lowest castes. The Rev. J. Peet, a CMS missionary, wrote in 1860 that:

while I would not make them [the slaves] the prominent object of our labours, I would in an unobtrusive manner establish school-houses among them to instruct and

---

<sup>73</sup> A.F. Painter, 'Christianity and Pulayas', Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Gazette, May 1882, p.217.

Christianise them and, when baptised I would and do admit them to equal standing with myself and other Christian brethren; yet, under present circumstances, I would not meddle with their legal standing, or urge them to assume a position in Travancore society that has never been granted them.<sup>74</sup>

This reluctant attitude was shared with other CMS missionaries and continued at least until the 1900s. In 1907, C.H. Gill, the Bishop of Travancore and Cochin, wrote that 'It is true that we have done but little except giving them some pastoral care and some lower primary education in small village schools. We have not done what has been done in other Missions'.<sup>75</sup> It is true that the CMS missionaries once tried to admit a Pulaya Christian to the CMS College before 1892. But this attempt resulted in a 'commotion', and the student had to leave for British Malabar, where caste feeling was 'less strong'. He was educated there by the Basel Mission and became an ordained minister.<sup>76</sup>

This reluctant attitude of the missionaries was largely a result of their strategy of winning the high castes first in order to win over all the population. Certainly, they knew

---

<sup>74</sup> Hunt, The Anglican Church, vol.II, p.111. Robin Jeffrey has also pointed out a similar view by J. Peet. Jeffrey, The Decline, p.39.

<sup>75</sup> Gill to Durrant, 1 Apr. 1907, Travancore and Cochin, Original Papers, CMSA.

<sup>76</sup> Industrial School for Pulayans, 1892, Travancore and Cochin, File No.136, CMSA.

very well that admitting the lowest castes might be a grave obstacle to their aims. A.F. Painter, a CMS missionary, wrote in 1907 that 'many missionaries have felt that to seek and evangelize these [the outcastes] first would be to repel the higher castes and prevent them receiving the Gospel'.<sup>77</sup> This attitude of the CMS missionaries seems not to have changed until the converts from the lowest castes themselves came to demand more favourable treatment from the church authorities. It was then that Hindu Pulayas led by Ayyan Kali demanded more favourable treatment from the higher castes and the state.

In 1906, two students who were Pulaya converts were admitted to the Cambridge Nicholson Institution, a CMS school for training teachers and catechists, and this eventually forced the missionaries to review their caste policies at least in part. Not surprisingly, the Syrian members of the CMS church strongly opposed their entrance. The Syrians objected to their sitting with Syrian students in the Cathedral Church and also to their living and boarding in the Institution. Then, the Syrians threatened to withdraw in a body if their children were sent to sit with the Pulaya Christians.<sup>78</sup>

At first, the Syrians' demands were largely conceded. It was decided that these two Pulaya students should work among their own people (Pulaya Christians) on Sundays, and a separate building was put up for them in the grounds of the

---

<sup>77</sup> A.F. Painter, 'The Call of the Indian Outcastes', Church Missionary Intelligencer, June 1907, p.347.

<sup>78</sup> Copy of Memorandum by Rev. A.F. Painter, 30 Mar. 1908; T.C. Cherian to Bishop, 7 Mar. 1907, Original Papers, Travancore and Cochin, CMSA.

Institution.<sup>79</sup> But such discriminatory treatment was no longer readily accepted by the Pulaya Christians. The Bishop of Travancore and Cochin wrote in April 1907 that 'There is serious discontent and disaffection among these convert classes'.<sup>80</sup> A Syrian member of the CMS also admitted that 'Many of the members of the depressed classes have begun to suspect, though not with good reason, that the older Christian community is deliberately standing in the way of their progress'.<sup>81</sup> Moreover, many converts left the CMS and joined other missions including the Salvation Army.<sup>82</sup> These discontents, suspicions or the forsaking of the CMS were some of the principal factors which changed the attitudes of the CMS missionaries. In 1909, C.H. Gill, the Bishop, stated regarding the discrimination in the 'Pro-Cathedral' that 'it cannot be supported by the New Testament'.<sup>83</sup> Thus, from 1909, the students from the lowest castes came to be permitted to sit in the cathedral, though the situation regarding the hostel seems to have remained the same. In 1914, a CMS missionary stated that students who were low-caste converts were still accommodated in separate buildings at least in the

---

<sup>79</sup> Copy of Memorandum by A.F. Painter, CMSA.

<sup>80</sup> Gill to Durrant, 1 Apr. 1907, Original Papers, Travancore and Cochin, CMSA.

<sup>81</sup> Papers read at the Fourth Meeting, 31 Dec. 1909, Original Papers, Travancore and Cochin, CMSA.

<sup>82</sup> Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, p.135.

<sup>83</sup> Bishop's Decision, The Pulaya Question, 1910, Original Papers, Travancore and Cochin, CMSA.

schools at Kottayam and Tiruwella.<sup>84</sup>

Compared with the CMS, the LMS missionaries were more sympathetic towards converts from the lowest castes. At least officially, they denied caste distinctions in their churches. However, just as there was a grave division between Syrian Christians and the low-caste Christians in the CMS churches, the division between Shanar Christians and Pulaya or Paraya Christians was a serious problem in the LMS churches as well. Until the mid-nineteenth century, the great majority of the converts of the LMS were Shanars. In 1858, an LMS missionary in charge of Neyyur, for example, stated that 'The people are mostly from the Shanar caste... There are also a few adherents from the weaver, fisher, and slave castes'.<sup>85</sup> But, as the number of converts from the lowest castes increased, troubles occurred in the LMS churches as well, though the LMS missionaries seem to have been determined not to allow caste distinctions. In 1871, William Fletcher, an LMS missionary, wrote that:

Caste has given us much trouble. The old converts from the Shanar castes had not the least will to admit the Pariahs and Puliahs into their chapels but this year the Rev. J.E. Jones adopted various measures to remove this evil. Already it has been greatly remedied and there is no doubt that sooner or later it will altogether take

---

<sup>84</sup> Painter, 'The Uplift', p.115.

<sup>85</sup> Pareychaley, 1874, TR, Box 2, CWMA.

its flight.<sup>86</sup>

Samuel Mateer also stated regarding caste distinctions and his attitude towards them that:

In another case I found that a separate prayer house had actually been erected in the Mission compound at Veeranakavu for the use of Pariah converts who were refused admission into the chapel by Shanar and Iluver Christians and when I called the former into the original chapel which I had erected some years ago for Christian worship, the Shanar Christians jumped up and went out. I ordered the removal of the second building and declared that the remaining one was the recognised Mission Chapel open to all and every one who might choose to enter.<sup>87</sup>

These attitudes of the missionaries inevitably caused the defection of many Shanar Christians. In one congregation, most of the Shanar Christians left the mission after they were required to allow the Paraya Christians to worship in the same chapel with them.<sup>88</sup>

In addition, unlike their CMS counterparts, the LMS missionaries paid attention to the social and economic

---

<sup>86</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1871, p.14.

<sup>87</sup> TDC Annual Report, 1872, Trivandrum, p.9.

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., 1872, Trivandrum, p.7.

conditions of their converts. As early as 1872, Samuel Mateer insisted on the importance of establishing schools and of encouraging and facilitating the 'legal acquisition of land' by the lowest castes. But, as in the case of the CMS, the low-caste Christians of the LMS also began to demand more equal treatment from the missionaries from the later nineteenth century. In 1891 Paraya Christians in south Travancore expressed their feeling that they were neglected and not properly cared for by the LMS missionaries. In 1908 a similar statement was made by Paraya Christians.<sup>89</sup>

G.W. Gladstone has argued that the conversion movements of the lower castes in Kerala were a 'part of the struggle of the oppressed sections of the society for their emancipation'.<sup>90</sup> However, it seems difficult to accept that all the cases of conversion can be treated as struggles for emancipation. As we have seen, the conversion of the lowest castes such as Pulayas and Parayas largely began in the 1850s and 1860s. It is true that a large number of people of these castes converted to Christianity despite the fact that they sometimes had to endure 'persecution' from their 'masters' or employers. However, the converts themselves seem not to have organized any substantial movements after they converted. Nor did they make any notable efforts to obtain fairer treatment from the higher castes and from the state. Also, at least partly as a result of this, their social or economic condition did not

---

<sup>89</sup> Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, p.137-8.

<sup>90</sup> Ibid., p.2.

change substantially after their conversion. Almost all of them were still agricultural labourers depending on their 'masters'. Moreover, as we have just seen, the converts were largely obedient to the caste system in their own church as well. It was not until the late nineteenth century that the social and political awakening began to emerge among the converts of the lowest caste as well as their Hindu counterparts. In short, their conversion itself might have been a serious event but their attitudes towards the society, state and religious authorities did not change after conversion itself. Therefore, it seems difficult to say that conversion was a result of some significant change inside themselves or that their conversion was a struggle for their emancipation.

But why, then, did they convert? Clear explanations have not been given to the question why a certain part of a certain caste converted to Christianity while others remained in their ancestors' religion. G.A. Oddie has pointed out that the conversion movements began among the more economically independent and then spread to the poorer sections in the case of the untouchable communities in the Telugu country. Duncan Forrester suggested that conversion movements become effective in times of social and economic dislocation including famine, and Dick Kooiman has also pointed out that crisis including famines and epidemics promoted conversions. However, the above arguments seem not to be able to explain the question



adequately.<sup>91</sup> People converted without obvious 'social and economic dislocation', and extremely poor people also converted. In any case, as far as Travancore was concerned, the substantial social awakening or movements for social mobility of the Christians from the lowest castes seem not to have begun until the late nineteenth century.

### Uplift of the Lower Castes

In order partly to prevent conversion to Christianity and partly in order to respond to the growing demands of the lowest castes, the Travancore government adopted several policies for the uplift of these castes. They were carried out largely through education, assignment of land and co-operative movements. As to education, as we have seen in Chapter 3, the government began its effort from the 1890s. It started to establish schools for 'backward classes' in 1894-95; scholarships were given to some pupils belonging to these castes; and four normal schools were opened to train teachers for them. In addition, the restriction on the admission of the lowest castes to government schools was mostly removed by the Education Code of 1910, and, as a result, the number of Pulaya and Paraya pupils increased sharply in the 1910s. By 1940 all

---

<sup>91</sup> G.A. Oddie, 'Christian Conversion in the Telugu Country, 1860-1900', Indian Economic and Social History Review, 7,1, 1975, pp.69-70; Duncan B. Forrester, 'The Depressed Classes and Conversion to Christianity, 1860-1960', in G.A. Oddie (ed.), Religion in South Asia (New Delhi: Manohar, 1991), pp.72-3; Dick Kooiman, 'Mass Movement, Famine and Epidemic', Modern Asian Studies, 25,2, 1991, pp.289-99.

schools except seventeen were opened to all communities, and all the special schools for the backward classes were abolished.<sup>92</sup>

Assignment of land to the lowest castes for habitation and cultivation began in the 1910s. In 1916-17 the Travancore government announced a plan to assign about 500 acres of land in Vilappil in the Neyyattinkara taluq to the Pulayas. The revised 'Puduval Rules' were issued in 1921.<sup>93</sup> In 1922, a total area of 15,280 acres was earmarked for assignment to the 'depressed classes',<sup>94</sup> and a certain portion of land was distributed annually from the earmarked land. In 1926-27, for example, 511 acres were assigned. Thus, by 1931, 4,775 acres was distributed to them. Although it is not clear how large the land assigned to each family was, 80.21 acres were assigned to 169 applicants in 1934-35. That is, a mere 0.47 acres were assigned to each family on average. Similarly, 0.69 acres were assigned in the previous year.<sup>95</sup> In addition, land outside the earmarked area was also distributed under concessional terms. In 1926-27, 1,797 acres were thus assigned to the 'depressed classes'.<sup>96</sup> To the state, this measure

---

<sup>92</sup> Velu Pillai, Manual, vol.III, pp.735-8.

<sup>93</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, pp.433-4. Puduval means 'newly cultivated land'.

<sup>94</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, pp.433-4. The Travancore government decided to use the term 'backward communities' instead of 'depressed classes' in 1936-37. TAR, 1936-37, p.154.

<sup>95</sup> TAR, 1934-35, p.47.

<sup>96</sup> TAR, 1926-27, p.27.

seems to have had at least two advantages. Firstly, it enabled the state to conciliate the lowest castes by giving them a certain amount of material assistance, which could ease discontent or tension among the lowest castes and also prevent migration. Secondly, this measure could be used to maintain the loyalty of the lowest castes to their leaders and the state. Undoubtedly, the distribution was conducted through the recognized leaders of these castes. At the time of the first distribution, land was given to the Pulayas who were members of Sadhu Jana Paripalana Sangham, which was established by Ayyan Kali. In other words, the distribution of land was one of the resources by which these leaders were able to maintain their authority over their followers.

In addition to these measures, the Travancore government tried to use co-operative societies for the uplift of the lowest castes. In Travancore, the co-operative system was introduced in 1915 by Dewan Sir P. Rajagopalachari, who was also the first Registrar of Co-operative Societies in the Madras Presidency.<sup>97</sup> The purpose of the introduction of the co-operative system was 'the promotion of thrift and self-help among agriculturists, artisans and persons of limited means'. The encouragement of village industry, improvement of sanitation and introduction of 'compulsory deposit schemes' were some of their activities. The Central Co-operative Bank was established in 1915 with a view to financing these

---

<sup>97</sup> Pillai, Manual, vol.III, p.673.

societies.<sup>98</sup>

One of the 'striking features' of this co-operative movement in Travancore was the existence of a great number of communal societies. In 1932-33, 715 out of 1,786 societies were communal.<sup>99</sup> The number of societies belonging to each community was as follows:

TABLE 13: Communal Co-operative Societies in Travancore in 1932-33

Community	No. of societies
Nayars	183
Christians	137
Brahmins	2
Izhavas	95
Cheramars (Pulayas)	102
Sambavars (Parayas)	25
Arayas or Valas	66
Muslims	12
Others	93
Total	715

Source: Report of the Co-operative Enquiry Committee, 1934, p.28. Arayas and Valas belonged to the 'depressed classes'.

As the above table indicates, many co-operative societies for the lowest castes were established. The first society for them was registered in 1916-17. It was organized mainly for the cultivation of punja lands<sup>100</sup> which were taken on lease from the neighbouring landlords. For this purpose, a loan was taken

<sup>98</sup> Pillai, Manual, pp.76-7, 656, 673.

<sup>99</sup> Report of the Co-operative Enquiry Committee, 1934, p.28.

<sup>100</sup> Punja land is 'land lying submerged in water'.

from the Central Co-operative Bank to meet the expenses for the purchasing of bulls, ploughs and other items.<sup>101</sup> But the societies for the 'depressed classes' were not very successful. In 1934, they were said to be in a 'dormant condition'. Although the reason for the failure was not clear, this was at least partly because the leaders of these societies were high-caste Hindus, and therefore 'The societies became either a one man's show or money was misappropriated by cooking up the accounts'.<sup>102</sup>

A Protector of the Depressed Classes was appointed in 1924.<sup>103</sup> At first, the Registrar of Co-operative Societies was entrusted with this post, but a full-time assistant in sole charge of the work was appointed in 1932. His work was, for example, inspection of lands registered for the 'depressed classes'; inspection of their co-operative societies; affording facilities for education; and exploring 'avenues for employment' of educated members of those communities.<sup>104</sup> As to the introduction of a colony system for the lowest castes, the efforts of the Travancore government were delayed compared to those of the Cochin government, which started to create colonies as early as 1919-20.<sup>105</sup> In Travancore, this system was introduced after receiving a proposal from the President

---

<sup>101</sup> Report of the Co-operative Enquiry Committee, p.106.

<sup>102</sup> Ibid., p.107.

<sup>103</sup> Census of India, 1931, Travancore, p.434.

<sup>104</sup> TAR, 1934-35, p.157.

<sup>105</sup> CAR, 1919-20, p.56.

of the Cochin-Travancore Board of the Harijan Sevak Sangh, most members of which were 'ardent Congressites and disciples of M.K. Gandhi'.<sup>106</sup> The President of the Board proposed that three co-operative societies should be started in each taluq for providing the lowest castes with 'house sites, buildings, wells and employment during the season of unemployment'. In addition, he urged the government to assign them '25 cents of land in suitable areas or places not far from their work' and also to give them Rs.25 for house building, Rs.50 for a well and Rs.25 for starting 'some industry such as kitchen gardening, weaving, poultry-farming or basket and mat-making'.<sup>107</sup> After considering this proposal, the Travancore government started to establish colonies for the 'depressed classes'. In 1935-36, land was acquired for three colonies and sanction was given to plans to create other colonies.<sup>108</sup>

Meanwhile, as this case suggests, the Travancore government maintained a good relationship with the Gandhian association at that time, though the Travancore government and Gandhians were sometimes in confrontation, for instance over the Vaikkam Satyagraha of 1924-1925 and temple-entry. In 1936-37, the government gave Rs.1,500 to the Kerala Provincial Board of the All-India Harijan Sevak Sangh for the distribution of textbooks among pupils from the 'backward communities' and also Rs.1,200 to them for their 'general ameliorative work'

---

<sup>106</sup> Confidential Files, No.1092, Bundle 31, KSA.

<sup>107</sup> Report of the Co-operative Enquiry Committee, 1934, p.111.

<sup>108</sup> TAR, 1935-36, p.149.

among these communities.<sup>109</sup> That was partly because the government considered the activities of the Sangh useful for its purpose of preventing conversion and partly because the Indian National Congress did not have much influence in Travancore until 1938, when the Travancore state Congress was founded and the government began to attack its politicians.<sup>110</sup>

#### Abolition of Tindal and Vaikkam Satyagraha

As we have seen, many caste disabilities had been abolished by the 1910s. Most public places were opened to the lower castes including the Pulayas and the Parayas. Under these circumstances, the lower castes, especially the Izhavas, began to demand total abolition of tindal, or caste pollution, by gaining the right for temple-entry. In 1920, Kunju Panikkar, a nominated member of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly and agriculturist, stated that 'theendal had disappeared from public roads, courts, cutcherries [government offices], schools and other public places. It was high time that it was rooted out from temples also'.<sup>111</sup> Similar demands for temple-entry began to be expressed in the late 1910s. C. Raman Thampi, a retired high court judge, referred to this idea in

---

<sup>109</sup> TAR, 1936-37, p.155.

<sup>110</sup> Robin Jeffrey, 'A Sanctified Label - "Congress" in Travancore Politics, 1938-48', in D.A. Low (ed.), Congress and the Raj: Facets of the Indian Struggle, 1917-47 (London: Heinemann, 1977), pp.448-9.

<sup>111</sup> SMPAP, 16th Session, 1920, p.107.

1917.<sup>112</sup> T.K. Madhavan, an Izhava leader, also wrote about the question of temple-entry in December 1917, and this issue was discussed at the meeting of the SNDP Yogam.<sup>113</sup> The demand was also frequently expressed at the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly.

The Travancore government clearly did not want to deal with this matter. Replying to T.K. Madhavan, M. Krishnan Nair (Dewan, 1914-20) stated in 1919 that:

This relates to religion and Government cannot well interfere. Suppose Government publish a notification declaring the abolition of theendal from tomorrow, do you think that it could be enforced? Is it practicable? ... I do not mean to say that theendal should exist for all time. It might stop in course of time as the result of the spread of education. Things are not now what they were 50 years ago ... But, do you think that one man, or even a Government for that matter, will succeed in bringing about the change desired by you?<sup>114</sup>

Similarly, the next Dewan, T. Raghaviah, declared in 1921 that

---

<sup>112</sup> T.K. Ravindran, Vaikkam Satyagraha and Gandhi (Trichur: Sri Narayana Institute of Social and Cultural Development, 1975), p.47.

<sup>113</sup> Robin Jeffrey, 'Travancore: Status, Class and the Growth of Radical Politics, 1860-1940', Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), pp.149-50.

<sup>114</sup> SMPAP, 15th Session, 1919, p.87.



he 'would not allow the matter to be discussed' in the Popular Assembly. However, the demands from Izhavas and others were very powerful and persistent. 46 members of the Assembly signed a memorial in 1922 demanding that the Devaswoms, or religious institutions, should be utilized 'for the common good of all Hindus'.<sup>115</sup> Thus, the government had to deal with this matter at the Assembly of 1922 as well, though it was determined not to open the temples to the lower castes.

The Vaikkam Satyagraha started in 1924 under these circumstances. It was realized that 'Satyagraha was the only possible course to be adopted for the removal of the gross injustice'.<sup>116</sup> One of the leaders was T.K. Madhavan, an Izhava editor, who was supported by some Nayers and the Indian National Congress led by Gandhi. The immediate purpose of the Satyagraha was to demand the opening of the roads near the Vaikkam temple in north Travancore to all castes. The Satyagraha was started on 30 March 1924 and ended on 23 November 1925. On the first day, a batch of three men consisting of a Pulaya, an Izhava and a Nayar entered the prohibited area and were arrested by the police. The next day again two Izhavas and a Nayar made a similar attempt.<sup>117</sup> Many higher castes supported the Satyagraha. Mannath Padmanabhan of the Nayar Service Society collected 2,000 signatures and

---

<sup>115</sup> Ravindran, Vaikkam Satyagraha, p.49.

<sup>116</sup> Menon, History of Freedom Struggle, p.117.

<sup>117</sup> Cotton to Ch. Sec., 10 Apr. 1924, File No.77 pd/1924, Foreign and Political, NAI; Jeffrey, 'Travancore', in Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power, pp.150-1.

led a 'Savarna Jatha' from Vaikkam to Trivandrum on foot.<sup>118</sup>

The attitude of the Travancore government towards the Satyagraha was to 'maintain the status quo ante', and therefore the demands of the satyagrahis were rejected. But the government seems not to have been completely resolute. T. Raghaviah showed some sympathy with the Izhavas by stating that 'this feeling (self-respect) deserved to be respected', though he emphasized that the problem would be solved only by 'methods of peaceful persuasion and the education of the caste communities to a realization of the fact that the custom of untouchability is as degrading to the latter [caste Hindus] as it is unjust to the former [non-caste Hindus]'.<sup>119</sup> Towards the higher castes, he stated that he recognized their 'legal right' to maintain the prohibition. But he simultaneously demanded that the higher castes should not 'insist too strongly on their legal rights' but should recognize the 'time spirit'.<sup>120</sup>

There is no doubt that it was crucial for the Travancore government to avoid destruction of 'communal harmony', intensification of 'class hatred', and endangerment of the 'public peace'. A riot which occurred in Salem District in the Madras Presidency some month earlier was of great concern to the Travancore government, as the Dewan himself referred to it. In Salem, some public streets inhabited by caste Hindus

---

<sup>118</sup> Gopalan, Kerala: Past and Present (London: Lawrence & Wishart, 1959), p.40.

<sup>119</sup> SMPAP, 21st Session, 1925, p.27.

<sup>120</sup> SMPAP, 1925, pp.27-8.

were thrown open to all castes, and this caused a riot attended with murder.<sup>121</sup> Also, the Mappila rebellion which broke out in British Malabar in 1921-1922 undoubtedly represented what the Travancore government most feared. To suppress this rebellion, the British used almost two brigades of infantry and 700 special police, which had to deal with about 10,000 rebels. As a result of this rebellion, battle casualties totalled 169 on the government side, whilst about 4,000 rebels were killed or wounded. In addition, 486 murders, 5,941 dacoities and 352 cases of arson were reported.<sup>122</sup> Thus, although the Dewan rejected the demands from the Izhavas and others, he, at the same time, tried to persuade the higher castes to recognize the spirit of the times. Consequently, an agreement was reached between Gandhi and the Travancore government, opening all the roads except for a short distance near the entrance of the temple.<sup>123</sup>

After the Satyagraha, demands for the abolition of tindal continued to be expressed. In 1927, T.K. Madhavan became General-Secretary of the SNDP Yogam and promoted Vaikkam-style satyagrahas in other towns in Travancore.<sup>124</sup> In addition, the Izhavas and other communities came to be involved in politics more intensely after that. The formation of the Joint

---

<sup>121</sup> Ibid., pp.26-8.

<sup>122</sup> Conrad Wood, The Moplah Rebellion and its Genesis (New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1987), pp.169-70.

<sup>123</sup> Gopalan, Kerala: Past and Present, p.40; Menon, History of Freedom Struggle, p.134.

<sup>124</sup> Jeffrey, 'Travancore', p.157.

Political Congress in 1933 largely by Izhavas, Christians and Muslims was one example.<sup>125</sup> Moreover, between 1928 and 1930, trade union organizations were formed in Alleppy and in Calicut and Cannanore in British Malabar.<sup>126</sup> That was undoubtedly one of the events which made the government acutely aware of class divisions as well.

In the meantime, the Syrian Christians continued to advance economically and came to demand political influence proportionate to their wealth and numerical strength more and more intensely. They demanded the opening of all branches of the government service first and a proper share in the legislature later. The formation of the League for Equal Civic Rights in 1918 and that of the Joint Political Congress in 1933 were some of the most important of their political activities. In addition, conversion to Christianity continued despite the efforts of the government and higher castes. Each census made them aware of this fact. Moreover, Izhavas, who were numerous and economically advanced, gradually came to show their interest in leaving Hinduism. All these trends threatened to undermine the basis of the 'Hindu State' and the privileges of the higher castes. It became more and more crucial for the government to prevent further conversions and also to keep the lower castes, especially the Izhavas, loyal to the state. For these purposes, the Travancore government adopted anti-missionary policies and, at the same time, gave

---

<sup>125</sup> Jeffrey, 'A Sanctified Label', p.443.

<sup>126</sup> Gopalan, Kerala: Past and Present, p.47.

the right to enter the government temples to the lower castes.

### Anti-missionary Policies and the Temple Entry Proclamation

In the 1930s the relationship between the missionaries and the Travancore government became considerably worse again. In that period, anti-Christian feelings were widespread in Travancore, and efforts were made to prevent conversion from Hinduism both by the government as well as by non-governmental bodies. G.A. Garstin, the AGG, wrote in April 1935 that 'during the last two or three years a change of policy on the part of the Travancore government has occurred which, it is felt, is inspired by a dislike of the rapid growth and spread of Christianity in the Travancore state and a determination to check it'.<sup>127</sup>

Perhaps the greatest cause for this spread of anti-Christian feelings was the growing influence of M.K. Gandhi and the nationalist movement led by him. As to this growing trend in Travancore, G.W. Trowell, an LMS missionary, reported in January 1932 that 'A growth in national feeling has been very evident in the last 18 months' and that 'A very large proportion of Hindu students wear khaddar [hand-woven cloth] habitually'.<sup>128</sup> Another LMS missionary referred to Gandhi's efforts to 'receive back' untouchables and stated that this

---

<sup>127</sup> The Travancore and Missions in Travancore State, W.A. Garstin, File No. 454-p(s)/36, Foreign and Political, NAI.

<sup>128</sup> Nagercoil, 1931, G.W. Trowell, dated 27 Jan. 1932, TR, Box 11, CWMA.

movement was 'a Nation-wide effort to resist Christian propaganda'.<sup>129</sup>

Under these circumstances, the publication of the Census Report of 1931 aroused great public concern. The Census Report described the growth of Christianity in Travancore as 'remarkable', and estimated that the number of converts from 'the Depressed Classes' was 70,000 during the last decade.<sup>130</sup> E.A.L. Moore, the CMS Bishop in Travancore and Cochin, stated that 'The publication of the recent Census Report ... has certainly disturbed the minds of the Nairs, the chief Hindu community in this State. As the government is largely under Nair influence, this has brought about a change in the attitude of the Government to Christians'.<sup>131</sup>

The conversion movement among the Izhavas was another cause of anti-missionary policies. Although there were some discussions among the Izhavas regarding the change of religion in the 1920s, it was in the 1930s that their conversion drew great attention from the government as well as the missionaries and other religionists. The communal feelings of Izhavas which had gradually been growing were expressed strongly in 'the abstention movement' in 1932 and 1933,<sup>132</sup>

---

<sup>129</sup> Attingal District, 1932, TR, Box 11, CWMA.

<sup>130</sup> Census of India 1931, Travancore, Part I, pp.337, 341.

<sup>131</sup> Moore to Sir Cusack Walton, CMS House, 13 Oct. 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>132</sup> This was a movement conducted by Izhavas, Christians and Muslims against the consitutional reform of 1932. They protested the reform by abstaining from voting or from accepting nominations to the legislative bodies. Gladstone, Protestant Christianity, pp.350-2.

and they were further heightened by the imprisonment of their leader C. Kesavan, who was sentenced to two years' simple imprisonment for sedition in 1935. C. Kunjuraman, Kesavan's father-in-law, then took a leading part in the movement to leave Hinduism.<sup>133</sup>

Added to this, B.R. Ambedkar's appeal for conversion undoubtedly had a considerable influence on Izhava's movement. In September 1935, Ambedkar declared at Yeoli in western India that he would leave Hinduism, and 'the whole India' was agitated by the declaration.<sup>134</sup> Then, some months later, at the beginning of 1936, Izhavas made public their intention to abandon Hinduism.<sup>135</sup> In June 1936, the Police Commissioner reported that agitation for the renunciation of Hinduism was one of the main activities of the SNDP Yogam, the Izhavas' principal organization.<sup>136</sup>

The missionaries did not fail to make use of this situation. On 5 June 1936, the Police Commissioner reported regarding the CMS's activities that:

Dr. Moore, Bishop of Travancore and Cochin, considers the present conversion movement among the Ezhavas as a

---

<sup>133</sup> 'Hinduism and Ezhavas', Garstin to Pol. Sec., 2 May 1936, 245-P(s)/36, Foreign and Political Proceedings, NAI.

<sup>134</sup> 'Open Letter', V.S. Dornakal, 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWM.

<sup>135</sup> 'The Travancore Ezhava Situation', V.S. Dornakal, Sep 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWM.

<sup>136</sup> Commissioner of Police to Ch. Sec., 5 July 1936, Confidential Files, Bundle 31, File 1092, KSA.

wonderful opportunity to do his bit for the Christian world ... For the conversion of Ezhavas into Christianity, a central committee under the Board of Missions has been formed ... Two special sub-committees of the central committee have also been appointed ... It is recommended by Dr. Moore that all Ezhava houses should be visited by the workers.<sup>137</sup>

In addition to the Christian missionaries, a number of preachers of different religions, such as Muslims, Sikhs and Buddhists, came to Travancore to work among the Izhavas, believing them to be ripe for conversion.

Under these circumstances, enthusiastic efforts were made by 'various anti-Christian agencies' to stop the conversion of non-Christians.<sup>138</sup> Among these bodies, the Kerala Hindu Mission was undoubtedly the most influential in the 1930s. Its President was V.S. Subramanya Aiyar, retired Dewan (Dewan, 1929-32), and other influential men including P.K. Narayana Pillai, High Court Judge and a Malayalam scholar, and P.K. Krishna Pillai, retired Dewan Peishkar.<sup>139</sup> R.C. Das, Secretary of the Arya Samaj in Travancore was also one of the secretaries of the Hindu Mission.<sup>140</sup> Supported by grants from

---

<sup>137</sup> Ibid.

<sup>138</sup> Memorandum from Mr. C.P. Bhanu, 6 Feb. 1935, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>139</sup> Ibid.

<sup>140</sup> Commissioner of Police to Ch. Sec., 5 July 1936, Confidential Files, Bundle 31, File 1092, KSA.



the Travancore government, they organized 'Reading Rooms, Book Depots, Gita classes, Sunday Schools, social service, and Health-Bureaus'. 'Travelling preachers and sadhus' were also appointed in different villages, especially where there were 'small backward churches'.<sup>141</sup> Distributing Malayalam booklets was one of their activities. One booklet, which was entitled 'The Missionaries must go', quoted figures showing the growth of Christianity and stated that 'At this rate Hinduism will be wiped out soon, and our national life will be in danger'.<sup>142</sup> Also, the Harijan Sevak Sangh was formed in Trivandrum in 1933, which was financially supported by the All-India Harijan Sevak Sangh and the Travancore government as we have seen. It did active propaganda work for 'temple entry to the Harijans and for the removal of their other disabilities'.<sup>143</sup>

Meanwhile, the Travancore government adopted a number of policies which were antagonistic to the Christians in the 1930s. In November 1932, the government passed an order that the buildings of aided schools could not be used as places of public worship without the permission of the Education Department. One year later, a similar order was passed to

---

<sup>141</sup> Memorandum from Mr. C.P. Bhanu, 6 Feb. 1935, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>142</sup> G.E. Phillips, 'Stirring Days in Travancore', The Chronicle of the LMS, July 1936, p.153.

<sup>143</sup> Commissioner of Police to Ch. Sec., 5 July 1936, Confidential Files, Bundle 31, File 1092, KSA.

forbid the use of places of public worship as school classes.<sup>144</sup> These orders, however, were not strictly enforced, and therefore the missionaries received 'a rude shock' when the amendment to the Educational Code was issued.<sup>145</sup> This amendment was published on 13 June 1936. It stated that:

the managements of schools now held in churches or places of public worship should before the end of the school year 1938-39 remove the schools to separate buildings approved by the department, failing which the grants, if any, and the recognition of such schools will be withdrawn.<sup>146</sup>

In addition, the Travancore government adopted a policy which limited free preaching in public. The Commissioner of Police issued an order on 22 July 1936 which stated that 'In the interest of the peace of the country, offensive conduct on the part of any religionist has to be deeply lamented and promptly taken notice of by the District officers concerned by the adoption of preventive measures prescribed by law'.<sup>147</sup>

---

<sup>144</sup> Order ROC 3574, 23 Nov. 1936, TGG, 24 Nov. 1936, p.320.

<sup>145</sup> The Travancore Government and Missions in Travancore State, II, W.A. Garstin, 19 Oct. 1936, FPP, 454-P(s)/36, NAI.

<sup>146</sup> Order ROC 3574, 23 Nov. 1936, TGG, 24 Nov. 1936, p.320.

<sup>147</sup> Commissioner of Police, 22 July 1936, enclosed in FPP, 454-P(s)/36, NAI.

Unlike the other order regarding schools and places of worship issued in 1930s, this order was enforced with a great deal of strictness. The Travancore government issued orders restricting some Muslim propagandists 'from making any public speeches for some weeks'. Similar orders were issued to Kunjuraman, an Izhava leader and editor of a daily paper, who declared his intention to become a Christian. Chako Sastri, a evangelist of the Mar Thoma Syrian Church, was also barred from any form of public speaking.<sup>148</sup>

Meanwhile, the missionaries were very careful in petitioning the British authorities in order not to stimulate anti-British or anti-missionary feelings among the public as well as by the state. G.H. Marsden, an LMS missionary, wrote on 3 September 1935 regarding the cancellation of the government grants that:

opinion here is very strongly against any appeal to the Paramount Power, except in a matter of fundamental and vital importance. Such an appeal in Travancore is very rarely made; and would put us and all our folk, in every department of life, into grave disfavour, both with the Government and with the rest of the population.<sup>149</sup>

He then mentioned that the 'whole section of the population of Roman Catholics' was regarded with 'considerable odium' by

---

<sup>148</sup> P.O. Philip to Rev. W. Paton, 21 Aug. 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>149</sup> Marsden to G.E. Phillips, 3 Sep 1935, TL Box 33, CWMA.

other sections when some of them appealed to the British Resident.<sup>150</sup> Thus, the missionaries were extremely careful at that time about requesting the British authorities for the intervention. On 13 October 1936, E.A.L. Moore, a CMS missionary, stated that 'I think then that the time has not yet come for us to make any representations to the India Office'.<sup>151</sup> It is true that W.A. Garstin (AGG, 1935-36) apparently sympathized with the missionaries. He wrote to the Government of India a number of reports on religious policy in Travancore, and he stated in one of them that 'spirit of religious tolerance and religious liberty seems now to be in jeopardy'.<sup>152</sup> But he also fully recognized that imprudent British intervention would make things worse.

Apart from temple-entry, Izhavas and other lower castes were still subjected to many caste disabilities. One government official described these disabilities in 1936, saying that:

More than forty roads mostly approaches to and surrounding temples ... are open to Christians and Muhamadans but not to non-caste Hindus. Regarding tanks, wells, Satroms [rest houses] there are none used by non-Hindus but which are not used by non-caste Hindus as

---

<sup>150</sup> Ibid.

<sup>151</sup> Moore to Sir Cusack Walton, CMS House, 13 Oct. 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>152</sup> The Travancore and Missions in Travancore State, W.A. Garstin, File No. 454-p(s)/36, FPP, NAI.

well. There are however 21 satrams reserved for caste Hindus exclusively. There are ten schools all Departmental which are not accessible to all classes.<sup>153</sup>

Seemingly, in order to cope with the Izhava movement for conversion, the Travancore government issued an order by which 'all public places and rest-houses maintained by the State are open to Izhavas and other depressed classes'.<sup>154</sup> This was published on 26 May 1936 as a result of strong pressure from the Maharaja himself, who was at that time on tour in Simla.<sup>155</sup> Also, the government decided to give eight seats to the Izhavas in the Travancore Legislative Assembly.<sup>156</sup> Further, in about September 1936, there was a kind of rumour about a temple entry proclamation which it was said would be issued on the Maharaja's birthday.<sup>157</sup> As a result, these government policies made 'many Ezhava leaders hesitate to put into effect the change-of-religion move on which they were with one accord keen about six months ago'.<sup>158</sup>

---

<sup>153</sup> Ch. Sec. to Private Sec. to Maharajah, 20 May 1936, Confidential Files, Bundle 38, File 1365, KSA.

<sup>154</sup> Philip to Paton, 21 Aug. 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>155</sup> There was a strong opposition within the government to this measure. Therefore, the Maharaja had to repeat his order by telegram to the Chief Secretary. Ch. Sec. to Private Sec. to Maharajah, 24 May 1936, Ch. Sec. to Private Sec. 24 May 1936, Confidential Files, Bundle 38, File 1365, KSA.

<sup>156</sup> 'The Travancore Ezhava Situation', V.S. Dornakal, Sep. 1936, India Odds Box 6, CWMA.

<sup>157</sup> Ibid.

<sup>158</sup> Ibid.

The Temple Entry Proclamation was actually issued on 12 November 1936, the Maharaja's birthday. By this proclamation, the temples controlled by the state were thrown open to Hindus of all castes. Although this proclamation was valid only for the government temples, some private temples were also thrown open after the proclamation. In 1937 'Valia Raja of Edappaly' decided to open all his temples to all Hindus and requested the government to publish his decision.<sup>159</sup>

After the Proclamation, the Travancore government continued to make considerable efforts to prevent conversion, although it relaxed the rules regarding the prohibition of the establishment of schools in religious institutions. It announced eleven days after the Proclamation that existing schools were exempted from these rules. In September 1937, however, the Travancore government ordered regarding fee concession in secondary schools that 'Hindu depressed people should continue to get full fee concession, but 85 percent of the Christian converts from these people must pay full fees, and 15 percent may get half-fee concession'.<sup>160</sup> As a result, according to a CMS missionary, 'a few hundred children throughout the state' had changed their names to Hindu ones by April 1938.<sup>161</sup> G.W. Trowell, an LMS missionary, explained the situation that 'Christian parents, anxious to give a son

---

<sup>159</sup> Valia Raja to Ch. Sec., 17 Aug. 1937, Confidential Files No.1499, Bundle 35, KSA.

<sup>160</sup> Nagercoil, 1937, G.W. Trowell, Box 12, TR, CWMA.

<sup>161</sup> Smith to Walton, 1 Apr. 1938, Travancore and Cochin, G2I5/d, CMSA.

a chance of High School education leading to a better life than the traditional depressed class occupations, can only do - because of their poverty - if they became Hindus'.<sup>162</sup>

Moreover, the government continued to give a 'generous grant' to the Kerala Hindu Mission, which actively worked among the lowest castes and Christians from these castes.<sup>163</sup> E.A. Pidcock, an LMS missionary, wrote in his report for 1938 that 'The Hindu Mission is very active all over Travancore State ... and offers all kinds of material advantages to the people'.<sup>164</sup> In fact, it had as many as 118 centres throughout Travancore in 1938. Holding meetings explaining the significance of the Temple Entry Proclamation, arranging for religious lectures, giving books, noon-day meals and scholarships to 'poor students', and conducting night schools, were some of their activities.<sup>165</sup> They also conducted a re-conversion ceremony and gave a certificate of re-conversion.<sup>166</sup>

There is no doubt that the Temple Entry Proclamation and subsequent efforts of the government and the Hindu Mission were highly successful. The Census Report of 1941 stated that 'It [the Proclamation] arrested the forces of disintegration in Hindu society and must have had its effect both in deducing

---

<sup>162</sup> Nagercoil, 1937, G.W. Trowell, Box 12, TR, CWMA.

<sup>163</sup> Travancore Directory, 1938, p.685.

<sup>164</sup> Attingal, 1938, E.A. Pidcock, Box 12, TR, CWMA.

<sup>165</sup> Travancore Directory, 1938, p.685.

<sup>166</sup> Nagercoil, 1937, G.W. Trowell, Box 12, TR, CWMA.

the number of converts to other religions and in encouraging several of those who had already left Hinduism to come back to the fold'.<sup>167</sup>

### Conclusion

Some of the principal matters with which the Travancore state was concerned regarding the lower castes were how to maintain the privileges of the higher castes in the government and also how to maintain social and economic order which the lowest castes supported at the bottom mainly as agricultural labourers. As long as these matters were not jeopardized, the state did not pay much attention to the lowest castes and their conversion to Christianity. Although the government issued a number of orders to relax caste restrictions in the nineteenth century, it was largely the result of pressures from the Madras government and the missionaries. Most of the lowest castes still remained agricultural labourers after their conversion, and the state had little reason to worry about the conversion.

From the late nineteenth century, however, the state paid more and more attention to the conditions of the lowest castes. Confronted with the growing politicization of Syrian Christians and with Hindu revivalism, the state gradually realized the importance of preventing further conversion in order not to allow the influence of Christians to grow any

---

<sup>167</sup> Census of India, 1941, Vol.XXV, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1942), p.129.



further and also in order to respond to the growing religious identity of the Hindus. Thus, it adopted a number of anti-missionary policies as well as measures for the uplift of the lower castes. However, the prevention of conversion was not the sole reason for these policies. The maintenance of the social and economic order or, in other words, keeping the lowest castes, including their Christian converts, loyal to the landlord as well as to the state became increasingly crucial, as they began to demand more equal treatment. Thus, conciliation of the lowest castes, Hindu or Christian, was also one of the principal concerns of the state in the 1910s. For this purpose, the government, in a sense, made use of the missionaries in this area too. The missionaries, especially those of the CMS, had become very conservative in terms of their attitudes towards the social, economic and political order, and the state expected the missionaries to persuade the converts to remain obedient to the existing order. At least partly for this reason, the state and the missionaries maintained on relatively favourable terms during the 1910s and 1920s.

However, the situation changed greatly in the 1930s. The influence of the nationalist movement led by Gandhi markedly increased in Travancore, and conversion to Christianity still continued. Moreover, Izhavas came to show their interest in mass conversion. Under these circumstances, the government adopted an anti-missionary policy. However, it was almost impossible for the missionaries at that stage to expect any substantial support from the British authorities, and thus

they had almost no choice but to accept these policies.

## CHAPTER 6

## COCHIN: DIFFERENT DEVELOPMENTS IN A SIMILAR STATE

Introduction

Cochin was a small state to the north of Travancore. In 1911, it had an area of about 1,418 square miles and a population of 918,110. Roughly speaking, the area was one fifth and the population was one fourth that of Travancore. Although small in its area and population, Cochin was a similar state to Travancore in many respects. Both were native states ruled by Hindu rulers and supervised by the same British Resident. The social structure of the states was also broadly similar. As Table 14 shows, the composition of major castes and communities did not differ greatly, though it might be noticed that the percentage of Brahmins in Cochin was considerably higher than in Travancore.

TABLE 14: Major Castes and Communities in Travancore and Cochin, 1911

Caste and community	Percentage to the total population	
	Cochin (%)	Travancore (%)
Brahmins	3.9	1.6
Nayars	13.2	17.3
Izhavas	22.7	15.9
Pulayas	7.9	5.4
Christians	25.4	26.4
Muslims	7.0	6.6
Others	19.0	24.7
Total	100.0	100.0

Source: Census of India, 1911, Vol.XVIII, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1912), p.73; Census of India, 1911, Vol.XXIII, Travancore, Part I, Report (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1912), p.256.

In addition, the states were also similar in terms of social customs. The Nayars and other castes adopted a system of matrilineal inheritance called marumakkattayam; the caste system was notoriously rigid compared to other parts of India; and the lowest castes such as the Pulayas were slaves until 1854 when they were legally emancipated. Moreover, the remarkably high literacy rate which both states attained was also an important similarity. And largely due to these, in some senses, overwhelming similarities, adequate scholarly attention has not been paid to this native state - with a few exceptions.<sup>1</sup>

However, it is also true that there were many differences

---

<sup>1</sup> The only work which has dealt with the politics of the Cochin state is M.J. Koshy's Constitutionalism in Travancore and Cochin (Trivandrum: Kerala Historical Society, 1972). As to the history of Jews in Cochin, J.B. Segal recently published A History of the Jews of Cochin (London: Vallentine Mitchell, 1993).

between the states. For example, the Cochin government was generally slow to introduce administrative reforms in many areas; it seems to have been more prone to nepotism and corruption; and, largely for these reasons, the British were more likely to intervene in the domestic affairs of Cochin. As to its religious aspect, very few Hindus converted to Christianity in Cochin in the nineteenth and twentieth century. These differences more or less influenced the development of education and medicine as well as the policy towards the lower castes. Therefore, in this chapter, which investigates the causes and consequences of these differences, we will examine the nature and change of this other native state.

### Corruption and British Intervention

At least until the late 1880s, Cochin was not a very problematic state for the Madras government, and the intervention of the British Resident seems to have been rare. The finance of the Cochin government did not present a serious problem, and the Madras government often expressed its satisfaction. In 1873 it stated that 'the financial condition of the State continues sound, and is satisfactory'.<sup>2</sup> In addition, administrative reforms in the state advanced more or less as it expected. In 1878, the Governor of Madras congratulated the Raja of Cochin on 'continued progress'

---

<sup>2</sup> G.O. No.467, 3 Dec. 1873, MPP, OIOC.

during the year.<sup>3</sup> Moreover, Cochin was largely free from disturbances and other forms of social and political conflict. At least, this matter was not paid much attention to by the British. A disturbance which occurred at Trichur in April 1880 was certainly an exception.

This disturbance was caused by two rival fractions of Nayers in connection with a festival called Poorum, or 'the annual pagoda feast'. The Nayers were villagers divided into 'the partisans of the Tirunampady and the Paramakavoo Temples'. The disturbance was begun by people armed with clubs and stones on the night of the festival and ended within 'an hour, or about that time' with the support of the British troops that were stationed there. The Madras government paid great attention to the disturbance. But that was not because the disturbance was a serious one, but because the Tahsildar of Trichur had called for the use of British troops. The Madras government criticized the Cochin government, remarking that 'the duty of maintaining internal order in the State rests on the Sirkar and its Police, and not on British troops'.<sup>4</sup> Thus, the inadequate ability of the Cochin police was a serious concern of the Madras government. Accordingly, under pressure from Madras, the Cochin government re-organized its police force in 1884. Until that time, the tahsildars (local administrative officers) performed the function of

---

<sup>3</sup> G.O. No.431, 13 Aug. 1878, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>4</sup> Macgregor to Ch. Sec., 22 May 1880; T.Govinda Menon to Resident, 19 May 1880; Dewan Peshcar to Dewan, 18 May 1880; G.O. No.254, 7 Jun. 1880, MPP, OIOC.

police as well as magistracy along with their subordinate peons.<sup>5</sup> In 1882-83, a police training school was formed, and a police officer from the Madras government was placed in charge of it. He was assisted by constables also from the Madras service.<sup>6</sup> Then, in 1884 a separate police department was organized. In 1885-86, the department had a total of about 350 men, including one Superintendent, seven Inspectors and 46 Head Constables. As in other departments, the Nayars were predominant, and comprised over 70 percent of the personnel.<sup>7</sup>

But this disturbance was certainly an exceptional case. There seem to have been no other serious riots or disturbances in Cochin. As a result, the British Resident did not pay much attention to the domestic affairs of the Cochin state. Nepotism was prevalent at that time. In the second half of the nineteenth century, the Dewans themselves were at least twice selected from the same family. Dewan T. Sankunni Menon (1860-1879) was the elder son of Dewan Sankara Variyar (1840-1856), and Dewan Govinda Menon (1879-1889) was a brother of T. Sankunni Menon, the previous Dewan.<sup>8</sup> This situation seems to have been very different from that in Travancore. At that time, many Dewans of Travancore were 'foreign' ones who did not have a strong relationship with the local communities. T.

---

<sup>5</sup> C. Achyuta Menon, Cochin State Manual (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1911), p.354; CAR, 1880-81, p.13.

<sup>6</sup> CAR, 1882-83, p.15.

<sup>7</sup> CAR, 1885-86, p.15, 17. Apart from the Nayars, there were 21 'Native Christians', 42 Muslims, 13 Brahmins, 5 'East Indians' and others.

<sup>8</sup> Kerala District Gazetteer, Ernakulam, pp.211-2.

Madava Row (1858-1872), A. Seshiah Sastri (1872-1877) and V. Ramiengar (1880-1887) were examples of this. However, as long as the state was free from serious problems, the British did not take much interest in the domestic affairs of the Cochin state.

From the late 1880s, however, the Madras government began to intervene more keenly in various areas including education, medicine and the uplift of the lower castes, as will be seen later. A Syrian Christian who was a member of the Cochin Legislative Council stated in 1936 that 'the Government of Madras through the Resident ... interfered even in the minute details of the administration'.<sup>9</sup> Certainly, the British tended to intervene in the domestic affairs of Cochin much more frequently than in those of Travancore in the 1920s and 1930s. That was partly because the Rajas and their governments were not considered to have had enough ability to deal with growing public demands. Indeed, the Madras government seems not to have had much confidence in the Cochin government. Regarding the quality of the administration report, for example, the Madras government stated in 1891 that 'there is throughout the report an absence of that intelligent criticism which the Government considers may be justly expected of those administering an independent State of the importance of Cochin'.<sup>10</sup> Perhaps the principal reason why the Madras government did not have much confidence in it was the nepotism

---

<sup>9</sup> Paul Mampilli to Garstin, 2 Oct. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/216B, OIOC.

<sup>10</sup> G.O. No.476, 31 July 1891, in CAR, 1889-90.



and corruption which prevailed in the state. In fact, these were serious problems. In 1890 Kerala Mitram stated that 'corruption and oppression prevail in every department, the Dewan looking after his own interest'.<sup>11</sup> In February 1896, Malayala Manorama also wrote that 'The bane of bribery can hardly be removed unless the general service is controlled by one entirely foreign to the various blandishments of local parasites and sycophants'.<sup>12</sup> This situation did not change substantially in the twentieth century. For example, when Maharaja Rama Varma died in 1932, 'not only was a respectable proportion of posts in the State Service occupied by his Consort's relatives and dependents, but both the Consort and her children attained a position of considerable affluence'.<sup>13</sup> Thus, there can be no doubt that many reigns in Cochin were affected by this kind of corruption. Perhaps the only exception was the reign of Raja Rama Varma, who ruled Cochin from 1895 to 1914.

This Raja's reputation was very considerable. J. Andrew (Resident, 1904-06) and C.G. Herbert (Dewan, 1930-35) highly appreciated the Raja's ability and personality. Andrew stated in 1906 that 'The Raja is a man of experience and of decided ability, who knows all the details of the administration and

---

<sup>11</sup> Kerala Mitram, 21 Mar. 1890, NNR.

<sup>12</sup> Malayala Manorama, 8 Feb. 1896, NNR.

<sup>13</sup> 'A Note on Cochin Politics', 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

who sees that everything goes on fairly right'.<sup>14</sup> Herbert also wrote that the Raja 'was characterised by a considerable intellect and a dominating personality and he was surprisingly free from any desire to use the position of Ruler which he occupied to benefit either himself or his relatives'.<sup>15</sup> According to Herbert, the Raja selected several able Dewans, such as Sir P. Rajagopalachari, Sir Albion Banerji and Joseph Bhore, and raised the administration of the state 'from a most primitive condition to a point at which it suffered nothing by comparison with the administration of the neighbouring Province of Madras'.<sup>16</sup> After describing how corrupt the state was before the installation of the Raja, the previously mentioned Syrian Christian member of the Legislative Council also stated that 'by His Highness's indefatigable labours and personal supervision corruption and nepotism were stamped out of the State'.<sup>17</sup> However, this was certainly an exceptional case, and the Raja's reign ended when he abdicated in December 1914. The rulers who succeeded him became 'puppets swayed by selfish relatives and favourites' due to the lack of 'their predecessor's personality or force of character'.<sup>18</sup>

The reason for this abdication, which was an 'uncommon

---

<sup>14</sup> 'Confidential Note', Letter No.133, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>15</sup> 'A Note on Cochin Politics', CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>16</sup> Ibid.

<sup>17</sup> Mampilli to Garstin, 2 Oct. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/216B, OIOC.

<sup>18</sup> Field to Glancy, 1 Feb. 1935; 'A Note on Cochin Politics', CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

thing' in those days, is not clear. The Raja himself stated in his speech that the abdication was occasioned by circumstances 'beyond his control' and added that this was due to failing health.<sup>19</sup> However, it is doubtful that health was the sole or real reason. F.S. Davis, the Principal of Ernakulam College, wrote in 1923 that the Raja voluntarily abdicated 'though in the enjoyment of sound health'.<sup>20</sup> The Kerala District Gazetteer pointed out in 1965 that his abdication was 'owing to differences of opinion with the paramount power'.<sup>21</sup> In any case, this seems to be a matter which requires further investigation.

Once Raja Rama Varma left the throne, corruption prevailed in the Cochin state as it had done before his reign, and this became a more and more serious problem for the Government of India, which was greatly concerned about the development of 'communal troubles' especially in the 1930s, as will be seen. Indeed, the British felt a strong necessity to intervene in the situation. They even considered the possibility of changing the Maharaja, although at the same time they fully recognized that the Maharaja still maintained substantial authority over the peoples of Cochin and that such overt intervention might cause more serious problems. D.M. Field, the AGG, stated in 1935 that:

---

<sup>19</sup> Malayali, 2 Dec. 1914, NNR; Sampadabhudaya, 18 Dec. 1914, NNR.

<sup>20</sup> F.S. Davis, Cochin: British and Indian (London: Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent & Co., 1923), p.72.

<sup>21</sup> Kerala District Gazetteer, Ernakulam, p.215.

The loyal tradition in Indian States is wonderfully strong and the Cochinites respect and like the present Maharaja ... I imagine that the Cochinites would be gravely disturbed and indignant if any public affront were offered to the present Ruler, such as enforced abdication, an upset of the established order of succession, or any overt enforced delegation of authority ...<sup>22</sup>

In addition to the 'communal troubles', the growing importance of the port of Cochin was also one of the principal reasons why the British came to pay more and more attention to the domestic affairs of Cochin. The port of Cochin was located on the 'direct sea-route to Australia and the Far East' and was an important place to 'embark and disembark for South India'.<sup>23</sup> Although the first plan to develop the harbour was made in 1835, it was not until 1921 that work was substantially started. In August 1936, after finishing the third stage of the work, Cochin was declared a major port, and the main work was finally completed in 1941.<sup>24</sup> There is no doubt that political stability was considered essential for the operation of the port. In 1935, D.M. Field, the AGG, stated that 'the future of the Cochin Port makes this [selecting a reliable man as Dewan] more than usually

---

<sup>22</sup> Field to Glancy, 1 Feb. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>23</sup> Cochin Affairs, 'Cochin' pp.149-50, PSP, L/P&S/13/1275, OIOC.

<sup>24</sup> Ibid.; CAR, 1935-36, p.113.

desirable'.<sup>25</sup>

Under these circumstances, the AGG and the Government of India adopted a policy of 'tactful intervention'. That is, they tried to make the Maharaja follow the advice of his properly constituted advisors instead of 'self-seeking relatives or favourites' without 'any obvious loss of dignity and prestige'.<sup>26</sup> This 'tactful intervention' was to some extent successful. The constitutional reforms of 1938 were one example of this. By these reforms, Dewan Sir Shanmukham Chetty introduced, after consulting the British, a kind of dyarchy in which a minister appointed from the non-official members of the Legislative Council came to manage the several departments of the administration instead of the Dewan.<sup>27</sup>

The appointment of Dewans such as C.G. Herbert, ICS (Dewan, 1930-1935) and Sir R.K. Shanmukham Chetty (Dewan, 1935-1941) itself was also a major part of this 'tactful intervention'. Before these Dewans were appointed, Cochin had two local men in succession as Dewans, namely P. Narayana Menon (Dewan, 1922-1925) and T.S. Narayana Ayyar (1925-1930). However, they became 'subject to Palace influences' and 'the latter in particular became the tool of the then Maharani who utilized him to obtain money by extortion'. The British took this situation very seriously and concluded that 'no local man could possibly hope to stand against Palace influences'. Thus,

---

<sup>25</sup> Field to Glancy, 8 Jan. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>26</sup> Ibid.

<sup>27</sup> Kerala District Gazetteer, Ernakulam, p.217; FR 15 Jan. 1938, 'Cochin Affairs', PSP, L/PS/13/1275, OIOC.

from 1930 onwards, the Dewans came to be chosen from outside.<sup>28</sup> Accordingly, one of the main roles of Herbert was to reduce 'Palace influences', and he certainly made great efforts to achieve this.<sup>29</sup> But, according to the AGG, Herbert was 'self-opinionated and heedless of His Highness's opinions and wishes' and eventually lost 'all favour' with the Maharaja. Under these circumstances, the AGG suggested that Herbert should revert to the Madras service in October 1935.<sup>30</sup>

Then, in order to select a Dewan who was 'as far as possible remote from Indian and local influence', the Viceroy proposed that a European Dewan should be appointed. But the Maharaja rejected this idea and wrote to the Viceroy that 'I am orthodox and, apart from the language difficulty there are many matters in which I must communicate with the Dewan personally in perfect freedom and complete intimacy. Obviously this is impossible in the case of a European'. Thus, the Maharaja mentioned the names of N. Gopalaswami Ayyangar and then Sir R.K. Shanmukham Chetty (1892-1953). Evidently, the British did not want Gopalaswami Ayyangar, a senior member of the ICS, who had 'strong nationalist (Congress) bias', to be Dewan. Accordingly, Shanmukham Chetty was selected.<sup>31</sup> As the

---

<sup>28</sup> Resignation of Shanmukham Chetty, 22 July 1941, PSP, L/P&S/13/1275, OIOC.

<sup>29</sup> Field to Glancy, 8 Jan. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>30</sup> 'Short Review of the Administration', 1936, CRR, R/2/888/216A, OIOC.

<sup>31</sup> Field to Glancy, 20 Feb. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

above process suggests, this was clearly a product of compromise. However, although he was not a European, the British must have been satisfied with this appointment. The AGG stated that he had 'many antecedents to his credit'. He had earned an 'international reputation' by his achievement at the Ottawa Imperial Economic Conference; he had been President of the Madras Legislative Council; and he was also a 'banker, financier and industrialist'.<sup>32</sup> Therefore, some people wondered 'whether it was exactly a promotion' when he became Dewan of Cochin.<sup>33</sup> It can be noted, by contrast, that the British had almost completely ceased to intervene in the selection of the Dewan in Travancore in the 1930s. As we have seen Chapter 1, Maharaja Sri Chitra, as a ruler of one of the 'full-powered States', rejected any interference by the Government of India when he selected C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar in 1936.<sup>34</sup> Clearly, the degree of British intervention was by this stage different between these two states.

Meanwhile, apart from corruption, some rulers of Cochin seem not to have had enough ability to deal with political matters, largely due to lack of a modern education and other reasons such as declining health and advanced age, at least in the eyes of the British. In Travancore, as we have seen, the princes were educated mainly by tutors. It is well-known

---

<sup>32</sup> 'Short Review of the Administration', 1936, CRR, R/2/888/216A, OIOC.

<sup>33</sup> Cochin Affairs, p.460, PSP, L/P&S/13/1275, OIOC.

<sup>34</sup> Rama Varma to Garstin, 1 Sep. 1936, CRR, R/2/888/207, OIOC.

that two Maharajas, namely Ayilliam Thirunal (Maharaja, 1860-80) and Visakham Thirunal (1880-85), were educated by Sir T. Madava Row, who later became a highly-reputed Dewan.<sup>35</sup> The British paid considerable attention to the education of the princes of Travancore. They usually supervised and approved the selection of the tutors and the curriculum of their studies. Particularly in the case of Sri Chitra Thirunal (Maharaja, 1931-1947), the British seem to have paid special attention to his education. In his minority, this Maharaja of Travancore studied subjects such as English literature and composition, English and Indian history, the outlines of world history, geography and elementary science. Several Indian and European tutors were appointed. D.W. Dodwell of the Indian Civil Service and Captain G.T.B. Harvey were two of them. Moreover, this Maharaja of Travancore was given administrative training at Bangalore for about one year just before his installation as Maharaja.<sup>36</sup>

But the situation in Cochin seems to have been markedly different. Unlike in Travancore, the princes of Cochin were instructed in a special school for the princes. In 1900-01, 29 boys studied in the Palace High School.<sup>37</sup> The reason why this school system was adopted instead of a tutor system was probably a financial one. That is, as will be seen later, the ruling house of Cochin was unusually large, while the state's

---

<sup>35</sup> Pillai, Manual, Vol.II, p.634.

<sup>36</sup> Pillai, Manual, Vol.II, pp.729-30.

<sup>37</sup> CAR, 1900-01, p.lxxvi.



total population was only one-fourth of Travancore. Therefore, it might have been difficult for the Cochin state financially to adopt a tutor system, which was no doubt much more expensive than the school system, and the problem was that this school system seems not always to have been successful in Cochin. Maharaja Rama Varma (1932-41), for example, lacked a 'modern education' and was completely ignorant of 'any language but his mother tongue'.<sup>38</sup> The lack of knowledge of the English language was undoubtedly a great disadvantage in a native state in which most of the administrative transactions were conducted in English. Thus, largely due to the corruption of the government, the inabilities of the rulers and the growing importance of the Cochin port, the British tended to intervene in the domestic affairs in Cochin, though they were very cautious about the method of doing so, particularly in the 1930s. They fully recognized that the Maharaja still maintained firm legitimacy and that overt intervention might provoke anti-British feelings.

#### Unsuccessful Missionaries and the State

Missionary activities were not very successful in Cochin, despite the considerable efforts that had been made. The CMS established a station in Trichur as early as 1842 and in Kunnankulam in 1854; the Church of England Zenana Missionary Society began its work in Trichur in 1881; and the Leipzig

---

<sup>38</sup> Field to Glancy, 8 Jan. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

Lutheran Mission started in Chittur in 1882.<sup>39</sup> But conversion to Christianity was remarkably rare, compared with Travancore. Achyuta Menon stated in 1911 that 'The Protestant missions ... have not made much progress ... the native Protestants of all denominations numbering less than 2,000, and even of these, many are sojourners from outside, especially Travancore'.<sup>40</sup> The statistics of the CMS also show this difference between Cochin and Travancore. In 1922, the CMS stations in the Cochin state had only 654 baptized members, while its stations in Travancore had more than 62,000.<sup>41</sup> Under these circumstances, a CMS missionary stated in 1920 that 'Hitherto there has been no mass movement in that area'.<sup>42</sup> Most of the lower castes did not become Christians in Cochin, though the reason is not clear.<sup>43</sup>

In Cochin as well as in Travancore, the CMS missionaries certainly preferred gaining converts from the higher sections of the society. And, partly due to this preference and partly due to the indifference of the lower castes itself, their activities in Cochin were largely confined to the higher castes. It is true that the CMS opened two 'experimental schools' with a view to 'reaching' the lowest castes in

---

<sup>39</sup> Achyuta Menon, Manual, p.224.

<sup>40</sup> Ibid.

<sup>41</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record, vol.32, No.2, May 1922.

<sup>42</sup> Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record, vol.30, No.4, Sep. 1920, p.82.

<sup>43</sup> As we have noted in Chapter 5, clear explanations have not given as to why some people converted and others did not.

Cochin. But this was as late as 1911, and the attempt was apparently a failure, attracting the attendance of as few as 15 pupils at each schools.<sup>44</sup> With this exception, the CMS missionaries undoubtedly gave almost all their attention to the higher castes in Cochin. For example, in order to attract Nambudiri Brahmins, who were supposed to 'exercise an enormous influence', the CMS planned to open a special Sanskrit class in the Mission High School at Trichur and also to distribute a copy of the Malayalam Bible to every Nambudiri householder in Cochin.<sup>45</sup> However, these efforts to win over the higher castes also proved unsuccessful. The Census Report of 1921 stated that 'the stray converts that are now obtained [by the missionaries] are only from the classes of Hindus which are lowest in the social scale'.<sup>46</sup>

Under these circumstances, the Cochin government did not need to be seriously concerned about the influence of the missionaries or a decrease of the Hindu population. On the contrary, it was broadly optimistic about the matter. The Census Report stated that 'With the advancement of education, these socio-religious distinctions - such as unapproachableness [sic] - are fast dying out and with it the necessity for embracing Christianity is also dying out'.<sup>47</sup> Thus, the Cochin government was able to utilize mission

---

<sup>44</sup> Annual Report for 1911, No.56, Original Papers, CMSA.

<sup>45</sup> Original Papers, No.90, 1897, CMSA.

<sup>46</sup> Census of India, 1921, Vol.XIX, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1922), p.21.

<sup>47</sup> Ibid.

schools with very little concern about their negative effects, i.e., the conversion of Hindus to Christianity. In fact, generous grants were given to the mission. In 1900-01, an annual grant of Rs.1,500 was given to the CMS High School at Trichur alone, which the missionaries considered an important institution to establish contact with the higher castes, as we have seen. That grant was the largest of all and more than ten percent of the total expenditure for the 124 grant-in-aid schools in Cochin.<sup>48</sup>

However, it is also true that there was friction between the Cochin government and the CMS. This was over the 'conscience clause'. This clause was a part of a new Grant-in-Aid Code which the Cochin government tried to introduce in 1905.<sup>49</sup> The purpose of the clause was to prohibit compulsory religious education in aided schools, and therefore the CMS missionaries were seriously concerned about the government's move. C.H. Gill, the Bishop of Travancore and Cochin, conducted a 'state visit' to the Raja and then interviewed with Dewan N. Pattabhirama Rau, whom the British Resident described 'an obstinate man of no particular ability', to propose an addendum that the conscience clause would not operate if there were some secular schools near the grant-in-aid schools.<sup>50</sup> But, despite his efforts, the Grant-in-Aid Code was enforced,

---

<sup>48</sup> CAR, 1900-01, pp.lxxviii-iv.

<sup>49</sup> Original Papers, No.70, 1906, T&C, CMSA.

<sup>50</sup> Bishop to Durrant, 31 Aug. 1906, Original Papers, T&C, CWMA; 'Confidential Note', Letter No.133, 19 Feb. 1906, MPP, OIOC.

and the grant to the CMS High School was withheld as the missionaries refused to recognize the conscience clause.<sup>51</sup> However, this situation did not last for more than some months. In 1907, a new Dewan, A.R. Banerji, was appointed. He was a Bengali Brahmin and a member of the ICS, who had received 'all his education' in England, and, soon after his appointment, the conscience clause was abolished.<sup>52</sup> C.H. Gill wrote regarding their activities in the Cochin state in 1918 that 'we have no trouble whatever in our High School or other Schools ... all has been tranquil since'.<sup>53</sup> Thus, the CMS was able to give religious education in the Cochin state without any restriction, and this situation was very different from that in Travancore, where religious education was not allowed to be given in school hours, as we have seen. In this sense, it can be said that the Cochin state was more tolerant towards missionaries than the Travancore state.

#### Public Demands for Education and State's Response

The Cochin government was very slow to provide education to its people compared with the Travancore government, though the first attempt to establish the vernacular schools was much earlier than in Travancore. In 1818, the Cochin government

---

<sup>51</sup> Gill to Wigram, 28 Dec. 1918, Original Papers, T&C, CMSA.

<sup>52</sup> Bishop to Durrant, 1 Apr. 1907, Original Papers, T&C, CMSA.

<sup>53</sup> Gill to Wigram, 28 Dec. 1918, Original Papers, T&C, CMSA.

created 33 vernacular schools with a view to train 'young men for State service'. However, they were abolished in 1832, and six vernacular schools were re-established instead in each taluq in the state three years later. But they were not very different from indigenous schools and were not successful.<sup>54</sup> As to English schools, the first schools was opened at Trichur in 1837. Although there were only two English schools at Trichur and Ernakulam in 1864, the number was considerably increased after A.F. Sealy, M.A. Cambridge, was appointed in 1865 Headmaster of the School at Ernakulam.<sup>55</sup> By 1873, the Cochin government had five English Schools with 390 students.<sup>56</sup> In the area of English education, Cochin seems to have been more advanced than Travancore. Although it had about four times as large a population as Cochin, Travancore had only 892 pupils in 16 English schools in 1872-73.<sup>57</sup>

However, in terms of vernacular education, educational facilities in Cochin were very backward. In 1872-73, the Cochin government still had the six vernacular schools established in the 1830s, but there were only 143 pupils in these schools.<sup>58</sup> In addition, the Cochin government did not establish village schools, which, as we have seen, the Travancore government started to create on a large scale as

---

<sup>54</sup> CAR, 1840-41, p.143.

<sup>55</sup> CAR, 1887-88, p.13.

<sup>56</sup> CAR, 1872-73, p.27.

<sup>57</sup> TAR, 1871-72, pp.70-1.

<sup>58</sup> CAR, 1872-73, p.27.

early as 1871. Moreover, rules for grant-in-aid were not adopted until 1889, where they were introduced in Travancore in 1875; and also attention was not paid to female education for a long time. It was as late as 1889 that the first government English school for girls was opened at Trichur. Travancore had the first school of this kind in the 1860s.<sup>59</sup>

These indicators of backwardness, especially the neglect of vernacular (Malayalam) education and the absence of government village schools, became a cause of public concern. In 1883, Kerala Mitram expressed 'a hope that the Dewan of Cochin will take the necessary steps for establishing village schools'.<sup>60</sup> Again in 1887, this newspaper pointed out the 'great neglect' of Malayalam education in Cochin.<sup>61</sup> The state's neglect was frequently criticized by the Madras government as well. In 1888, it stated that 'elementary teaching is still much neglected, and the neglect is a serious blot on the administration' and urged the Cochin government that a grant-in-aid system should be introduced.<sup>62</sup> Evidently, the Madras government desired the encouragement of vernacular education, rather than English, at the time. In 1892, it stated that:

---

<sup>59</sup> Achyuta Menon, Manual, pp.294, 299. The Carmelite Mission established a convent girl's school at Ernakulam in about 1887.

<sup>60</sup> Kerala Mitram, May 1883, NNR.

<sup>61</sup> Kerala Mitram, Aug. 1887, NNR.

<sup>62</sup> G.O. No.490, 491, 14 July 1888, MPP, OIOC.

vernacular instruction is much more popular than English in the State of Cochin, and the extent to which pupils resorted to the newly-opened schools of the former class was noteworthy. There is nothing to regret in this, and the Government would gladly see a hundredfold increase in the vernacular schools maintained or aided by the Sirkar, even if for the time English education were to be neglected.<sup>63</sup>

Under such pressure from the Madras government, a Grant-in-Aid Code was adopted in Cochin in 1889, and due to the enforcement of this code, the number of aided Anglo-Vernacular Schools increased from 4 to 18 by 1890, and 16 'purely Vernacular Schools' were given grants for the first time. In addition, a Normal School was opened at Trichur in July 1890 with a view to training teachers for Malayalam education.<sup>64</sup> Thus, started substantial efforts by the Cochin government for education, though this was not until the late 1880s. The British Resident stated in 1892 that 'The Administration has

---

<sup>63</sup> G.O. No.448, Political, 27 Jul. 1892, in CAR 1890-91. This attitude of the Madras government towards Cochin seems to have been very different from that towards the Madras Presidency itself. In 1903, a Madras-based newspaper criticized the educational policy of the Madras government saying that 'Owing to the indifference of Government and its unwillingness to spend much money on the Educational Department, the primary schools in this Presidency have been gradually decreasing in number ... The Government is ready to squeeze to spend any money from their benefit'. Swadesamitran, 27 July 1903, NNR.

<sup>64</sup> CAR, 1889-90, pp.94, 108, 120.



began to realize its responsibilities in regard to education'.<sup>65</sup>

However, despite the delay in the educational efforts of the Cochin government, the state of education in Cochin was not very backward even in the 1890s. In a sense, it was more advanced than that in the Madras Presidency, and the Madras government itself certainly fully recognized the situation. The British Resident reported the following statistics in 1894.<sup>66</sup>

	Proportion of pupils of the population (%)	That of the population of school going age (%)
Cochin	3.4	22.3
Travancore	4.46	29.7
Madras Presidency	2.06	13.7

One of the reasons for this rather advanced situation was that a large number of private unaided schools began to be established in the late nineteenth century. G.T. Mackenzie, the British Resident, stated in 1903 that 'the people themselves without a penny of assistance from the Darbar [government] maintain a constantly increasing number of elementary schools'.<sup>67</sup> In fact, the number of private unaided

---

<sup>65</sup> Hannyngton to Ch. Sec., 19 May 1892, in CAR, 1890-91.

<sup>66</sup> Grigg to Ch. Sec., 27 May 1894, in CAR, 1892-93.

<sup>67</sup> Mackenzie to Ch. Sec., in G.O. No.587, 23 Dec. 1903. The word 'Darbar' or 'Durbar' sometimes indicated the government of a princely state itself. In 1935, the Government of India agreed to use the term 'Government of Cochin' in place of 'Darbar' in official correspondence with the state. C.G. Prior to Garstin, 11 Dec. 1935, 'Cochin Affairs', p.451, PSP, L/PS/13/1275, OIOC.

schools increased considerably in the 1890s. It rose from 543 in 1891-92 to 862 in 1897-98,<sup>68</sup> and the Madras government frequently urged the Cochin government to put these unaided schools under government control.<sup>69</sup> However, whether they were aided or unaided, there is no doubt that the educational development of Cochin greatly depended on these private institutions.

This tendency did not largely change in Cochin at least for a few decades in the twentieth century. Although the relative importance of government schools gradually increased, the Cochin government still largely depended on non-government schools, as Table 15 indicates.

TABLE 15: The Percentage of Pupils Educated in the Government Schools in Travancore and Cochin, 1900-1931

year	Travancore	Cochin
1900-01	24.8(%)	17.3
1910-11	37.5	33.6
1920-21	48.3	40.5
1930-31	44.5	34.4

Source: Travancore Administration Report, 1900-01, 1910-11, 1920-21, 1930-31; Cochin Administration Report for the same years.

But who established these private schools? Roughly speaking, Syrian Christians and other Indians were the major founders of the private schools, though the CMS and Roman

---

<sup>68</sup> CAR, 1891-92, 1897-98.

<sup>69</sup> Report of the Education Survey Committee, Cochin State (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1934), p.61.

Catholic missionaries also educated a large number of pupils in their own institutions, as the following table suggests.

TABLE 16: Running Bodies of the Aided Schools in Cochin and the Number of Pupils.

running bodies	1900-01	1910-11	1920-21	1930-31
Government (Aided)	6,831	17,265	39,006	44,416
CMS or Protestant Roman Catholic missionaries	1,333	1,797	2,277	3,212
Indian priests	480	1,670	10,110	4,979
Indians	2,442	5,660	8,276	32,907
Masters themselves	5,020	9,007	24,112	55,100
Unaided	1,046	718	1,152	5,378
Total	22,448	15,246	11,437	6,921
	39,600	51,363	96,370	152,913

Source: Cochin Administration Report, 1900-01, 1910-11, 1920-21, 1930-31.

Among the running bodies, 'masters themselves' means the masters of indigenous schools, who were usually called Asans. As to 'Indian priests', many of them were undoubtedly Syrian Christians, though Hindu temples also had some schools such as the Tirumala Devaswom High School which had 239 boys in 1900-01. In the same year, there were 124 aided schools in Cochin and at least 31 schools were run by Christians excluding 11 CMS and 3 Zenana Mission's schools, and most of the above 31 schools were undoubtedly run by Syrian Christians. These schools were called, for example, 'Jacobite Syrian Girls' School', 'Parazhanji Mar Dionysius School', or

'Parapur Church School'.<sup>70</sup> In addition to Christians, 'Indians' or 'Native gentlemen or ladies' also educated a great number of pupils in Cochin, as Table 16 indicates. Although it is difficult to specify exactly who ran these schools, at least it is clear that Syrian Christians and other Indians, by establishing private schools, greatly contributed to the development of education in Cochin.

To sum up, the state of education in Cochin was very backward until the 1890s, compared with Travancore. In fact, the Cochin government did not pay much attention to education, especially to vernacular education. However, this situation began to improve markedly in the 1890s. Strong and growing demands for education, especially for vernacular (Malayalam) education, began to emerge largely from the late nineteenth century, and, as a result, a large number of private schools were established without any support from the government. Under these circumstances, the Cochin government, in accordance with the 'advice' of the Madras government, promoted vernacular education rather than English education by giving grants-in-aid to these private schools. Consequently, Cochin attained the second highest literacy rate in India of 33.7 percent in 1931, which was remarkably high compared with that of only 10.8 in the Madras Presidency.<sup>71</sup>

---

<sup>70</sup> CAR, 1900-01, pp.lxxviii-iv.

<sup>71</sup> Census of India, 1931, Vol.I, India, Part I, Report (Delhi: Manager of Publications, 1933), p.339.

Medicine: Public Demand and British Intervention

As in the case of education, medical development was also delayed in Cochin, and the Madras government strongly intervened in this area from the late nineteenth century as well. The first attempt to introduce European medical treatment was made by a missionary called Rev. J. Dawson, who opened a dispensary at Mattancheri near British Cochin as early as 1818. However, it was closed after two or three years even though it received a monthly grant from the Cochin government. In 1823, the Civil Surgeon of British Cochin was made ex-officio Darbar (government) Physician, and a dresser was attached to the jail at Ernakulam. The first government hospital, called the Charity Hospital, was established in 1848: this later developed into a General Hospital. In 1875, the second hospital was opened at Trichur. Vaccination was first introduced into Cochin in the 1800s and six trained vaccinators were employed from 1812 onwards. As in other parts of India, however, vaccination was dreaded 'as much as the small-pox itself', and therefore it made but little progress. Although a vaccination department was organized in 1886, the situation did not change immediately.<sup>72</sup> In 1889, the Madras government criticized the Cochin government on the grounds that 'the proportion of persons vaccinated to the total population of the State is lamentably small'.<sup>73</sup>

---

<sup>72</sup> CAR, 1940-41, p.127; Achyuta Menon, Manual, pp.285-8.

<sup>73</sup> G.O. No.381, 382. 2 July 1889, MPP, OIOC.

The general condition of medicine in Cochin also seems to have been far from adequate. In 1889, J.C. Hannyngton, the British Resident, severely criticized the medical policy of the Cochin government, stating that:

The medical wants of the inhabitants are very imperfectly attended to by the Sircar [State]. Not merely is there a totally insufficient medical staff and a lack of dispensaries and hospitals, but there is a lamentable and cruel neglect of the miserable diseased poor. There is no provision whatever for the alleviation of the sufferings of lepers ... There is no accommodation for insane persons...<sup>74</sup>

Hannyngton not only criticized the Cochin government but also gave it extremely detailed 'advice'. In 1890, he laid before the Cochin government a 'fairly complete scheme' for the reorganization of the Medical Department. In this 'scheme', he called for 'a large staff, with a definite scale of pay and promotion, a better means of supervision of out-hospitals and dispensaries'.<sup>75</sup> He also expressed detailed views, such as that:

Chittoor and Iringalacodu dispensaries should be raised to the rank of hospitals capable of accommodating in-

---

<sup>74</sup> Hannyngton to Ch. Sec., 13 June 1889, in G.O. No.381,382, 22 July 1889, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>75</sup> Hannyngton to Ch. Sec., 30 Apr. 1891, in CAR, 1889-90.

patients; a hospital for in-patients should be established at Nemmara, and dispensaries at Wadakan cherry, Kondagalore and Annavadda.<sup>76</sup>

The Madras government supported the Resident's plan, and the Cochin government began to make substantial efforts in this direction.<sup>77</sup> The Resident reported in 1892 that 'I am exceedingly glad to record that steps are being taken ... for the complete organization of the Medical Department in accordance with the scheme submitted by me in 1890'.<sup>78</sup>

One of the reasons why Hannington was so keen in this area was that Cochin was seen to be very backward compared with Travancore until the 1880s. Although the number of patients treated in government institutions increased remarkably after the 1890s, the government institutions treated extremely small number of patients in 1870-71 and 1880-81, as Table 17 shows. In fact, the Cochin government had only two hospitals, in Ernakulam and Trichur, until 1882. Although several hospitals and dispensaries were established from the mid-1880s, government medical facilities were insufficient to cope with the growing public demands.<sup>79</sup> In 1888, Kerala Mitram, a Malayalam newspaper, urged the necessity for increasing the number and improving the condition of the existing hospitals

---

<sup>76</sup> Ibid.

<sup>77</sup> G.O. No.476, 31 July 1891, in CAR, 1889-90.

<sup>78</sup> Hannington to Ch. Sec., 19 May 1892, in CAR 1890-91.

<sup>79</sup> CAR, 1887-88, p.88; CAR, 1888-89, p.71.

in the Cochin state.<sup>80</sup>

TABLE 17: Number of Patients Treated in Government Institutions, 1870-1931

year	Cochin	Travancore
1870-71	2,454	66,757
1880-81	6,797	92,419
1890-91	70,822	137,880
1900-01	182,695	438,433
1910-11	265,973	543,345
1920-21	313,267	980,238
1930-31	753,164	1,975,328

Source: Cochin Administration Report and Travancore Administration Report for 1870-71, 1880-81, 1890-91, 1900-01, 1910-11, 1920-21, 1930-31.

Communities other than Hindus adopted much more positive attitudes towards Western medicine. Table 18 indicates that Jews and 'Europeans and Eurasians' used the government institutions far more frequently than other communities.<sup>81</sup> Apart from these communities, Christians and Muslims were much more positive than the Hindus.<sup>82</sup> Evidently, these non-Hindu communities contributed greatly to the growth of the public demands for Western medicine in the Cochin state. Especially, considering their numerical strength, the presence of Syrian Christians seems to have been extremely important.

---

<sup>80</sup> Kerala Mitram, 1 June 1888, NNR.

<sup>81</sup> In 1891, there were 1142 Jews, 38 Europeans and 270 Eurasians in the Cochin state.

<sup>82</sup> The reason why Muslims, who were usually considered more conservative, showed such a positive attitude towards Western medicine is not clear. However, the hospitals were situated in urban areas, and some Muslims resided in these areas such as traders might have adopted these attitudes.



TABLE 18: Communities of the Patients Treated in the Government Medical Institutions in the Cochin state in 1888-89.

community	No. of patients	No. per 1000 of population
Christians	6,195	35.7
Hindus	3,628	7.2
Muslims	1,345	29.0
Jews	1,189	1041.1
Europeans and Eurasians	753	2444.8
Total	13,110	18.1

Source: Cochin Administration Report, 1888-89, p.73; Report on the Census of Cochin 1891, Part I, The Reviews (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1893), p.50.

Besides Western medicine, indigenous medicine was also paid attention to in Cochin as in Travancore. Although Cochin was less advanced than Travancore in this area, it was certainly much more progressive than the Madras Presidency. The first substantial attempt to promote indigenous medicine was started in 1897, when eleven vaidyans were employed by the Cochin government. Six of them were located in each of the seven taluqs except Cochin taluq, and the remaining five vaidyans were attached to the palace. These vaidyans were expected to treat those who objected to have 'resource to the public hospitals and dispensaries'.<sup>83</sup>

In addition to employing vaidyans, the government supported private efforts as well. In 1915, the Cochin government placed a site at Cheruthuruthi, near the border with British Malabar, at the disposal of the 'Keraliya Ayurvedic Samajam'.<sup>84</sup> This

<sup>83</sup> CAR, 1896-97, p.97.

<sup>84</sup> Literally, 'Malayali Ayurvedic Association'.

association established an Ayurvedic hospital on the site, and it continued to receive a contribution from the Cochin government.<sup>85</sup> However, the establishment of a government Ayurvedic hospital was considerably delayed. It was as late as 1932-33 when the Rama Varma Central Ayurvedic Hospital was founded at Trichur. Also, a full time superintendent, who supervised rural vaidyasalas and vishavaidyasalas, was not appointed until 1935-36.<sup>86</sup>

Even so, the policy of the Cochin government towards indigenous medicine was more advanced than that of the Madras government. As we have seen in Chapter 4, the committee appointed by the Madras government to enquire into indigenous medicine praised the attainments of Cochin as well as Travancore.<sup>87</sup> The reasons for this were the same in Cochin as they were in Travancore. That is, the Hindu state of Cochin not only had little hesitation about introducing indigenous medicine, which was cheaper and more popular among conservative people, but also could reinforce its legitimacy as a Hindu state by encouraging Ayurveda, which was one of the main elements of Hindu culture. But, in the case of Cochin, one more point should be added. That is, many members of the ruling family were themselves practitioners of indigenous medicine. In 1924, for example, Kerala Varma, the First Prince of Cochin, was a 'private practitioner especially in poisons,

---

<sup>85</sup> Krishna Menon, Progress of Cochin, p.390; Davis, Cochin, British and Indian, p.91.

<sup>86</sup> Vishavaidyan is 'a dealer in antidotes'.

<sup>87</sup> Report on the Indigenous Systems, Part 1, p.6.

animal, mineral and vegetable', and the Seventh Prince, at that time, intended to deal with the Ayurvedic system of medicine.<sup>88</sup> Also, Maharaja Rama Varma (1932-1941) was himself 'a renowned physician' while he was heir apparent.<sup>89</sup> Thus, the ruling family of Cochin had a special relationship with Ayurveda, and undoubtedly this was one of the causes which promoted the development of indigenous medicine in Cochin.

#### Government Policy towards the Lower Castes

Caste disabilities in Travancore were 'almost without modification' applied to Cochin.<sup>90</sup> Tindal or unapproachability was strongly existed in that society. In 1871, T. Shunguny Menon, the Dewan of Cochin, submitted a report to the Madras government which stated that the lower castes were not permitted to use public roads; they were not permitted to enter or approach within a certain distance of many courts and public offices; and they were excluded from

---

<sup>88</sup> Ibid., part 2, pp.85-6.

<sup>89</sup> 'Cochin Affairs', p.140, PSP, L/P&S/13/1275, OIOC. The ruling house of Cochin was an unusually large one, which had 'no less than 106 males and 113 females' in 1923. Princes of this house were therefore educated in a special school, instead of receiving education from private tutors, and they were expected to take a certain profession after finishing their education. Besides becoming Ayurvedic physicians, one became a Munsiff (judicial officer), in the British service, and another a lecturer in the Ernakulam College. But the problem of suitable employment was a 'very serious one'. Davis, Cochin, British and Indian, p.72.

<sup>90</sup> Acting Resident to Ch. Sec., 31 Jan. 1871, in G.O. 9 Mar. 1871, MPP, OIOC.

public service.<sup>91</sup>

The first substantial attempt of the Cochin government to remove these restrictions was made in 1871 under pressure from the Madras government, as was the case in Travancore. After the assault case of Rev. W. Lee took place in south Travancore in 1868, the Madras government ordered the Cochin government to submit a report on its caste disabilities. Replying to the request, T. Shunguny Menon, the Dewan of Cochin, stated that they would adopt the following policies towards this matter: Firstly, the government would establish several vernacular schools in which 'care' would taken to 'make them available to all classes', though existing six vernacular schools and a Sanskrit school could not be open to the lower castes. Secondly, he wrote that 'All highways connecting one part of the country with another' should be declared to be open to all castes and that a new line would be opened 'where sections of main lines pass too close to places which it would be very inconvenient to throw open to all classes'. However, he declined to throw open the high streets of towns on the ground that the enforcement of this measure 'would be most unpopular and would create discontent in all but a few of the lowest castes'. Thirdly, he stated that the Cochin government would remove 'all impediments to the free access by all classes to the Courts of Justice and to the public offices'. Finally, he promised to employ all castes in the government offices except

---

<sup>91</sup> Shunguny Menon to Acting Resident, 24 July 1871, in G.O. No.75, 9 Mar. 1871, MPP, OIOC.

in 'the Revenue and Magisterial Offices'.<sup>92</sup> Apparently, these measures were imperfect and, moreover, it is doubtful whether they were actually enforced or not. For example, the number of vernacular schools still seems to have been the same, even in 1888-89.<sup>93</sup> However, the Madras government was largely satisfied with this statement of the Dewan. It stated in 1871 that 'a very considerable step has been taken to remove caste disabilities in the Cochin State'.<sup>94</sup> After that, the Cochin government did not take much interest in the lower castes.

It was not until 1919 that T. Vijayaraghava Charya (Dewan, 1919-1922) began substantial efforts for the uplift of the lower castes. Immediately after his appointment, he established several new schools for the 'backward classes' and threw open all schools to them apart from 'four or five'.<sup>95</sup> The Cochin government paid special attention to what it classified as the 'depressed classes'.<sup>96</sup> It introduced a system of free supply of books, slates, clothes and other school requisites, besides exempting them from the payment of school fees. The pupils were also fed daily, though this free-feeding came to be restricted to the last day in the week as

---

<sup>92</sup> Shunguny Menon to Ag. Resident, 24 Jan. 1871, in G.O. No.75, 9 Mar. 1871, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>93</sup> CAR, 1888-89, p.69.

<sup>94</sup> G.O. No.26, 25 Jan. 1871, MPP, OIOC.

<sup>95</sup> CAR, 1919-20, p.45.

<sup>96</sup> They were two hill tribes of the Kadar and Malayan, and six castes of the Kanankkan, Pulayan, Vettuvan, Sambavan (Parayan), Ullatan and Nayadi. Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXI, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1933), p.289.

the number of pupils increased. In addition, special scholarships were sanctioned to some individuals for university courses.<sup>97</sup> As a result of this policy, the number of Pulayas in public schools increased remarkably. It rose from 200 in 1919 to 2,900 in 1920.<sup>98</sup> Besides, many night schools were opened for adult members of the 'depressed classes'.<sup>99</sup>

Apart from these educational efforts, attention was paid to their economic and even spiritual conditions. The colony system was introduced in 1919-20 when the state began substantial efforts for the lower castes. The first colony was established at Chalakudy in central Cochin. It afforded 'suitable accommodation in a healthy spot' for 40 families of Pulaya labourers working in the vicinity. Provisions were made for giving education in the three R's and in making mats and baskets.<sup>100</sup> Similar colonies continued to be established. In 1931, there were 41 colonies with 1,640 families in them.<sup>101</sup> In these colonies, the Cochin government also created Bhajana Mathoms, or places of worship, which were 'instrumental in freeing them from many of their dark superstition and in raising the general level of their cleanliness'. Every morning the 'depressed class' people went to these Mathoms, which were

---

<sup>97</sup> Krishna Menon, Progress, p.63; Census of India, 1931, Cochin, p.292.

<sup>98</sup> CAR, 1919-20, p.57.

<sup>99</sup> Krishna Menon, Progress, p.63.

<sup>100</sup> CAR, 1919-20, pp.56-7.

<sup>101</sup> Census of India, 1931, Cochin, p.293.

officiated over by a priest chosen from themselves.<sup>102</sup> In addition to the colony system, co-operative societies were organized among these people, which taught them 'the methods of husbanding their meager resources' and trained them in 'habits of self-reliance and mutual trust'.<sup>103</sup>

Moreover, wells and tanks were constructed for them, and 'plots of lands' were freely leased to these people. Also, one Pulaya called P.C. Chanchan was nominated to represent the caste in the Legislative Council of Cochin,<sup>104</sup> and a Protector of the Depressed Classes was appointed in 1927. His work was, for example, visiting villages inducing the depressed classes to send their children to school; advising them to be clean; and arranging meetings to explain the value of education and the facilities provided by the government.<sup>105</sup> These government efforts certainly contributed to the uplift of the lower castes, especially in the area of education. By 1931, for example, three Pulayas including a girl reached the college classes.<sup>106</sup>

However, there was also criticism regarding the colony system because it was based on the idea of segregation. In 1941, an 'educated Harijan lady' stated that 'colony system

---

<sup>102</sup> Ibid.; Krishna Menon, Progress, p.66.

<sup>103</sup> Census of India, 1931, Cochin, p.293.

<sup>104</sup> Krishna Menon, Progress, p.67.

<sup>105</sup> Krishna Menon, Progress, pp.198-9. As the Director of Public Instruction became an ex-officio Protector, this work was practically conducted by the Assistant Protector.

<sup>106</sup> Census of India 1931, Cochin, p.292.

was detrimental to the interests of the Depressed classes' and that 'closer contact with caste Hindus was necessary for their uplift'.<sup>107</sup> Moreover, it is doubtful whether the Cochin government was particularly keen in its efforts or not. In fact, the government was sometimes reluctant, and, compared with Travancore, it was apparently slow in this area as well. As we have seen, the Travancore government gradually admitted the Izhava pupils to the government vernacular schools from about the 1890s and decided to throw open its schools to the lowest castes such as the Pulayas by the Education Code of 1909-10. It was almost ten years before the Cochin government took similar action. The Travancore government also nominated representatives of the lower castes in the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly as early as the 1900s. In addition, the Cochin government did not permit the lower castes to enter the Hindu temples until 1947-48. As a result of this reluctance, the British sometimes intervened in this area too, and urged the Cochin government to take more positive action. For example, the appointment of the Protector of the Depressed Classes in 1927 was a result of the AGG's suggestion to the Cochin government.<sup>108</sup>

These delays could have been caused by the following reasons. Firstly, unlike in Travancore, conversion to Christianity was rare in Cochin, and the Cochin government was

---

<sup>107</sup> FR, 30 April 1941, in 'Cochin Affairs', PSP, L/PS/13/1275, OIOC.

<sup>108</sup> FR, 2nd half of Nov. 1926, Foreign and Political, 541-P/1926-27, NAI.



not seriously concerned about the influence of the missionaries or a decrease of the Hindu population, and therefore did not take ameliorative measures for the lower castes as keenly as the Travancore government. Second reason could be that the Cochin government, which was considerably affected by corruption and nepotism especially in the 1920s and 1930s, was not able to recognize and respond to the demands from the lower castes. At least, this was considered one of the reasons at the time. In 1926, the AGG stated that:

many reforms, especially those connected with the uplifting of the depressed classes ... have come to nothing. How far this reactionary policy is due to the Consort's influence it is hard to say, but there is undoubtedly a considerable feeling in the State that her presence so near the head of affairs is detrimental to its best interests.<sup>109</sup>

However, notwithstanding the reluctance of the Cochin government, there were growing communal movements in Cochin as well as in Travancore. According to the Census Report of 1931, 'many important castes and communities, including the Muslims and the Christians, have at present their caste or communal associations systematically working for the furtherance of their interests'.<sup>110</sup> Among the Izhavas

---

<sup>109</sup> FR, 2nd half of Jun. 1926, Foreign and Political, 541-P/1926-27, NAI.

<sup>110</sup> Census of India, 1931, Cochin, p.261.

(Tiyas), for example, Sri Narayana Guru's influence was strong in Cochin as well, which 'galvanized the dormant community into rigorous activity'. Accordingly, the Thiyya Mahajana Sabha and other Yogams of the Izhavas were established and worked for social reform and uplift of the community. The 'depressed communities' also began to establish their caste associations. The Pulayas had the Pulaya Mahajana Sabha and other associations.<sup>111</sup>

The British authorities paid considerable attention to these movements in Cochin. In 1935, D.M. Fields, the AGG, stated that communal dissension permeated 'every department and every activity' in the state.<sup>112</sup> Undoubtedly, they were afraid that these communal movements would become a force directed against the British or the native state which they supported. The AGG pointed out that there was 'a body of opinion in Cochin with republican tendencies' and that 'the seeds of discontent and revolution ... may sprout unless a timely remedy is applied'.<sup>113</sup> The Government of India held the same view as the AGG. Lord Willingdon, the Viceroy, wrote in his letter to the Maharaja of Cochin regarding communal movements that 'I have reason to believe that serious difficulties of this character already exist, and I can only

---

<sup>111</sup> Census of India, 1931, Cochin, p.294; The Thiyya Mahajana Sabha was called the Ezhava Samajam until 1927, and it again changed its name to the Cochin SNDP Yogam in 1938. P.K.K. Menon, History of Freedom Movement in Kerala (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1972), p.466.

<sup>112</sup> Field to Glancy, 1 Feb. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>113</sup> Ibid.

express the hope that they will not become more pronounced in the future'.<sup>114</sup> Thus, the British evidently had a very serious concern about the development of communal movements in Cochin. But the Maharaja's own view seems to have been completely different. In 1935, he stated in his letter to the Viceroy that 'happily no such [communal] troubles exist at present in my State'.<sup>115</sup>

This difference in attitude between the Government of India and the Cochin state towards communal movements was also shown in the case of the 'Tiya memorial'. This was a memorial sent to Lord Willingdon by the Tiyas of Cochin residing in Ceylon in 1933. In the memorial, they claimed that the Tiyas were not allowed access to 'various public roads'; that Hindu temples were closed to them; and that 'the public service fortified with caste Hindus affords no access' to them.<sup>116</sup> Although D.M. Field, the AGG, realized that the petition contained 'a great deal of exaggeration', he at the same time pointed out that there was a 'widespread discontent among the middle and lower classes' and tried to persuade the Maharaja to adopt a 'wise and statesmanlike policy'. The Government of India also stated that 'a friendly warning' should be given to the Maharaja regarding the distribution of posts in the government service, which was one of the principal demands from several

---

<sup>114</sup> Willingdon to Maharaja, 2 Mar. 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>115</sup> Maharaja to Willingdon, 1 March 1935, CRR, R/1/1/2678, OIOC.

<sup>116</sup> Memorial Committee to AGG, 1 Dec. 1933, CRR, R/2/887/204, OIOC.

communities.<sup>117</sup> However, the Maharaja, who was 'very orthodox and conservative' and 'impervious to modern influence',<sup>118</sup> did not comply with these advice. Regarding the 'Tiya memorial', the Maharaja stated that:

they [the petitioners] refer to temple-entry, untouchability, caste system, provision of common tanks, common wells ... they are based on age-long customs which have obtained the sanctity of religion and law, and they are too ingrained upon the habits and customs of the people that it is impossible to abolish them by a stroke of the pen without greatly provoking the sentiments of a large majority of the people.<sup>119</sup>

Thus, the Maharaja was not ready at all to hear the demands of the people who wanted more equal treatment. To him, their demands were 'unreasonable requests' which were 'calculated to wound the feeling of others'.<sup>120</sup>

In the meantime, the Temple Entry Proclamation was issued in Travancore in 1936. But, not surprisingly, a similar proclamation was not issued until 1947-48 in Cochin. Perhaps the most important reason for the delay was the personality

---

<sup>117</sup> Field to Maharaja, 19 Feb. 1934; Foreign and Political Dept. to Field, 13 June 1934, CRR, R/2/887/204, OIOC.

<sup>118</sup> Field to Deputy Sec., 22 Mar. 1934 and 19 May 1934, CRR, R/2/887/204, OIOC.

<sup>119</sup> Maharaja to Field, 1 Mar. 1934, CRR, R/2/887/204, OIOC.

<sup>120</sup> Ibid.

of the Maharaja. This 'very conservative and orthodox' Maharaja had no will to issue a similar proclamation, though the demands for temple entry were frequently expressed after 1936 as well. In 1938, for example, the 'All Cochin Temple-Entry Conference' was held at Ernakulam to demand a similar proclamation to that issued in Travancore.<sup>121</sup> However, the Maharaja of Cochin was firmly opposed to the opening of the temples to the lower castes. Sir Shanmukham Chetty (Dewan, 1935-1941) stated to the Izhava's organization in 1940 that the Izhavas should not 'embarrass the Maharaja on that issue'.<sup>122</sup> Also, the position of Christianity in Cochin could be a further reason. As we have seen, the missionaries' efforts were not very successful in Cochin, and the number of conversion was very small. Therefore, the Cochin state did not feel the threat of Christianity very strongly, and this might have attributed to its negative policy. The temple entry of the lower castes was not permitted in Cochin until the Cochin Temple Entry Authorisation Proclamation V of 1123 (1947-48) was issued.<sup>123</sup> By that time, the Maharaja's power had almost ceased to exist. Before the proclamation, most power was transferred to the popularly-elected Chief Minister.<sup>124</sup>

---

<sup>121</sup> FR, 15 Feb. 1938, in 'Cochin Affairs', PSP, L/P&S/13/1275, OIOC.

<sup>122</sup> FR, 2nd half of Jan. 1940, in 'Cochin Affairs', L/P&S/13/1275.

<sup>123</sup> Kerala District Gazetteer, Ernakulam, p.222.

<sup>124</sup> Ibid.

Cochin as a Hindu State

No doubt the rulers of Cochin identified themselves as those of a Hindu state. They must have thought that protecting Hinduism was one of the principal functions of the state, and the Maharaja's stubborn rejection of temple entry in the 1930s was, in a sense, normal behaviour as a ruler of the Hindu state. Also, as in Travancore, the Cochin state maintained uttupura to give 'charity' to the Brahmins and managed devaswoms. The ruling family had a special temple called the Purnatrayisa Temple for themselves at Trippunithura near Ernakulam.<sup>125</sup> The Rajas usually resided in this town. In 1858, Sir Charles Allen Lawson, a journalist and the Secretary of the Madras Chamber of Commerce, reported that the Raja 'rises a little before six, devotes about an hour to private affairs, then proceeds to the bath, and performs the many tedious ceremonies enjoined on all good Hindoos, which, with prayers at the pagoda, occupy him until ten, at which time he returns to the palace'.<sup>126</sup>

However, the sense of identity as a Hindu state seems to have been considerably weaker in Cochin than in Travancore. Unlike the rulers of Travancore, those of Cochin at least did not regard themselves as servants of a Hindu god as the Travancore rulers did, nor did the state perform splendid rituals such as the Murajapam and Hiranyagarbham. Perhaps this

---

<sup>125</sup> A. Sreedhara Menon, Social and Cultural History of Kerala (New Delhi: Sterling, 1979), p.187.

<sup>126</sup> Ibid., p.108-9.

difference could be largely due to the political situation in the eighteenth century. As we have seen, it was Martanda Varma (Raja, 1729-1758) of Travancore who dedicated his state to Sri Padmanabha and originated major state rituals. He rapidly expanded his territory and, therefore, needed to establish, by using religion and rituals, firmer authority over the newly-conquered areas. On the other hand, the Cochin state was a small state which had been in existence since about the twelve century occupying the same small area. Therefore, the problem of creating and maintaining was much less in Cochin. This may be one of the reasons why the Cochin state did not express a Hindu-state ideology as strongly as Travancore, though it is still true that Cochin had many features as a Hindu state.

### Conclusion

The British came to take more and more interest in the administration of the Cochin government from the late nineteenth century onwards. They began to intervene in the areas of education and medicine, and, in the 1920s and 1930s, much attention was paid to policy towards the lower castes and communal movements. In fact, many of the basic policies of the Cochin government in these areas were made in accordance with the 'advice' of the British Residents, and Cochin seems to have been intervened in much more frequently than neighbouring Travancore.

The reasons for this difference might be as follows: First

of all, Cochin was apparently backward in these areas, compared with Travancore. The Cochin state had neither enough institutions to provide vernacular education nor a grant-in-aid system until the late 1880s; medical facilities in the 1880s were poor; and Cochin was backward in its policies towards the lower castes as well. Consequently, the Resident, who also supervised Travancore, naturally compared these two states and tried to intervene in the more backward one. In addition, nepotism and corruption tended to prevail in Cochin, and therefore the British did not greatly appreciate the ability of the Cochin government to run the administration properly. Moreover, inabilities of the rulers themselves were also a problem in Cochin. That was largely due to a failure of education of the princes, which, for example, produced a ruler who was 'impervious to modern influence'.<sup>127</sup> It seems clear that the ruler's ability or personality was sometimes a determining factor in a political system in which the ruler's opinions or preferences had to be taken seriously. Finally, the growing importance of the port of Cochin was one of the factors which made the British pay more attention to the domestic affairs of Cochin.

However, it is true that similar changes did occur in Cochin to Travancore. Communal identities of a variety of castes and communities emerged, and many associations were formed; the State had to introduce policies for the uplift of the lower castes to deal with growing demands from these

---

<sup>127</sup> Field to Deputy Sec., 19 May 1934, CRR, R/2/887/204, OIOC.



castes; and the state attempted, though it ultimately failed, to introduce a measure to prohibit religious education in aided schools, thus undoubtedly responding to anti-missionary feelings in society. But it seems equally true that these changes did not occur in Cochin as strongly as they in Travancore. Perhaps one of the principal reasons for this was the obvious failure of the missionaries. In Travancore, the growth of Hindu revivalism was greatly stimulated by vigorous missionary activities; Syrian Christians, as we have seen in Chapter 5, became more of a threat to the state and the higher castes because of the continuous growth of Christian population; and the Travancore state had to adopt more positive policies towards the lower castes, partly to prevent further conversion. In addition, the delay in educational and medical policy in Cochin also seems to be the indirect result of the failure of the missionaries. As we have seen, these policies were largely adopted in co-operation and competition with the missionaries in Travancore. In other words, the strong presence of the missionaries in Travancore was at least one of the factors which promoted social and political changes, and stimulated the process of state-building and social reform.

## CONCLUSION

The triangular relationship between Christian missionaries, the princely state of Travancore and the British colonial authorities was not fixed but constituted a more complex and changing situation than has previously been considered. Despite their evident religious differences, the missionaries and the Hindu state were not always confrontational. The British authorities did not always support the missionaries, nor did they always try to intervene in the domestic affairs of Travancore. The positions, interests, attitudes and policies of all three of these groups changed substantially during the period which this study covers, and indeed their relationship underwent a structural change from the late nineteenth century onwards.

In 1858, Sir T. Madava Row, a renowned administrator, was formally appointed Dewan of Travancore, and the substantial and enthusiastic efforts of the Travancore state to transform itself into a modern state began. To a state that was keen to introduce 'enlightened and progressive ideas from the West',<sup>1</sup> the educational and medical activities of the missionaries were very valuable. Pioneers of Western education, the missionaries managed a great number of schools; likewise the medical institutions of the missionaries with highly-trained European doctors were extremely useful to the state. The

---

<sup>1</sup> SMPAP, 1st Meeting, 1904, Dewan's Address, p.3.

missionaries in turn frequently praised the efforts of the state for 'modernization'. In this way, during the 1860s and the 1870s, the Travancore state and the missionaries were largely able to co-exist and co-operate rather than engaging in hostile confrontation.

It is true that the missionaries were also a potential threat to the existing social and religious order in this self-declared Hindu state. In fact, the number of converts to Christianity increased almost constantly. But the state did not pay much attention to this matter until the late nineteenth century, largely because conversion to Christianity was mostly confined to the lower castes. The principal function of the Hindu state was to protect the supreme god, Sri Padmanabha, and the temples in the state, and the concern of the state was with maintaining the Hindu tradition of the higher castes, who were the only politically influential section of the society. The lower castes were not considered to be within the religious system which the state was expected to protect until the late nineteenth century, and therefore the religion of the lower castes, who also largely stayed as obedient agricultural labourers under their former 'masters' even if they became Christians, had little basically to do with the state until the powerful emergence of Hindu revivalism and communal movements.

Meanwhile, in the 1860s and 1870s, the British authorities were still keen to intervene in the existing social order, particularly with respect to caste disabilities. They were preoccupied with the idea of introducing 'civilization' to

India, as their attitude to the breast-cloth disturbance in the late 1850s clearly demonstrates. It is true that Queen Victoria declared in 1858 that the British governments should respect the 'rights, dignity, and honour of native princes' and 'the ancient rights, usages, and customs of India'.<sup>2</sup> Also, Thomas Metcalf has argued that the British, considering that it was 'too dangerous to interfere directly with Indian customs and beliefs', greatly changed their attitudes after the Mutiny.<sup>3</sup> But this was not the case with respect to Travancore. Both the Madras government and the missionaries were deeply concerned with social problems in Travancore even after the Mutiny. The missionaries frequently approached the Madras government, and their demands were to a great extent accepted and supported. In other words, in the 1860s and 1870s, the missionaries, the Travancore state and the Madras government shared at least some elements of the same value system. They all appreciated the need for Westernization and 'modernization', and were, more or less, preoccupied with the idea of the superiority of Western culture as manifested especially in education and medicine. Nationalism, which enthusiastically disputed many aspects of this Western colonial dominance, had not yet strongly emerged. Under these circumstances, the missionaries and the Hindu state, even though they were potentially confrontational, maintained

---

<sup>2</sup> Parliamentary Papers, Vol.18, 1959, Paper No.110, pp.14-15.

<sup>3</sup> Thomas R. Metcalf, The Aftermath of Revolt: India, 1857-1870 (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1965), pp.132-3.

favourable relationship during this period.

But this favourable relationship greatly deteriorated towards the end of the nineteenth century. The clearer religious identity became, the more concerned high-caste Hindus became at conversion from Hinduism to Christianity. The Syrian Christians came to regard themselves as a completely different religious community and became increasingly assertive, demanding more government appointments and proper share in the legislature. Thus, for ideological and political reasons, the state came to be seriously concerned about the continuously decreasing percentage of the Hindu population and about the expanding influence of the missionaries and Christianity. As a result, in the 1890s and 1900s, the situation surrounding the missionaries greatly changed. The Travancore government adopted a number of anti-missionary policies including the prohibition of religious education during school hours, and, virtually for the first time, took some measures of its own for the uplift of the lower castes. One missionary stated in 1900 that 'during the last decade the whole policy of Government has been changed'.<sup>4</sup>

Meanwhile, it became increasingly difficult for the missionaries to expect any support from the British authorities after the late nineteenth century. The British became very sensitive to the religious feelings in the society as Indian nationalism and Hindu revivalism emerged. It is true that Lord Curzon (Viceroy, 1899-1905) intervened extensively

---

<sup>4</sup> Neyoor, 1900, TR, Box 7, CWMA.

in the domestic affairs of the princely states. But, as far as Travancore was concerned, he was very cautious about provoking the feelings of the Indians and tried to avoid intervening in matters relating to social and religious customs. In the twentieth century, this tendency became even clearer with the stated policy of non-interference of Lord Minto (Viceroy, 1905-1910). In Travancore, although the British intervened to some extent during the minority period of Maharaja Sri Chitra from 1924 to 1931, their intervention almost entirely ceased in the 1930s (though not the same in Cochin).

Under these circumstances, the missionaries practically lost political support from the British authorities. Consequently, the attitudes of the missionaries towards the Travancore state gradually shifted. They were obliged to recognize the power and authority of the Maharaja more than before. In 1871, a missionary described Travancore as 'nominally an independent state', while, in 1908, another missionary referred, in his book, to the Maharaja's 'own administration' and his 'perfect freedom in the management of his own affairs'.<sup>5</sup> In other words, the missionaries became increasingly amenable to the state. In fact, missionary agitations, which had been seen, for example, in the case of the abolition of slavery and of breast-cloth controversy in the mid-nineteenth century, almost ceased in the twentieth

---

<sup>5</sup> Samuel Mateer, The Land of Charity: A Descriptive Account of Travancore and its People (London: John Snow and Co., 1871), p.66; I.H. Hacker, A Hundred Years in Travancore (London: H.R. Allenson, 1908), p.11.

century. The movements for social equality in the early twentieth century were conducted not by the missionaries but largely by the lower castes themselves.

Partly due to this change on the part of the missionaries, the state continued to see the missionaries as more useful than harmful to itself, and, largely for this reason, the relationship between the state and the missionaries did not deteriorate further in the 1910s and 1920s. The state, which had to deal with growing public demand with a limited state revenue, continued to depend on the educational and medical activities of the missionaries. In addition, the state expected the missionaries to conciliate the low-caste Christians, who became increasingly assertive. At that time, it was one of the principal concerns of the state to keep the lower castes, Hindu or Christian, obedient to the existing social, economic and political order. To avoid disturbances such as the Mappila rebellion in British Malabar in 1921-22 was certainly one of the greatest concerns of the state in the early twentieth century. In this respect, the missionaries shared much the same view as the state. Thus, P. Rajagopalachari (Dewan, 1907-1914) persuaded the low-caste Christians to 'obey the church authorities'.<sup>6</sup>

In the 1930s, however, anti-Christian feelings were widespread among the higher castes, who were greatly influenced by Gandhi's agitations against the missionaries and untouchability. In addition, the Izhavas, one of the largest

---

<sup>6</sup> Addresses to the Dewan of Travancore, March-May 1914 (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914), p.130.

communities in Travancore, were planning to convert to Christianity or some other religion en masse. Thus, the state as well as some high-caste Hindus made considerable efforts to hinder the spread of Christianity in the 1930s. The Temple Entry Proclamation was one of the principal results of the government efforts as well as of, more broadly, social and political changes which greatly changed the relationship between the missionaries, the state and the British authorities.

Thus, the relationship between the missionaries, the Travancore state and the British authorities was much more complex and fluid than scholars have previously seen it to be. It is true, as Robin Jeffrey has pointed out, that the missionaries aggressively criticized the existing social order and the policy of the Travancore government in the mid-nineteenth century.<sup>7</sup> But it is equally true that the missionaries keenly sought a favourable relationship with the Travancore state, and this aspect became much clearer in the twentieth century, when, for a series of administrative, political and social reasons, the missionaries became far more amenable to the state. They not only almost completely ceased to criticize the 'social problems' of Travancore, but also helped the Hindu state to maintain the existing political and economic order. Conversely, the Travancore state continued to try to make use of the missionaries and, generally speaking,

---

<sup>7</sup> Robin Jeffrey, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics in Travancore, 1847-1908 (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976), pp.37-69, 265.



helped them generously. Particularly in the area of medicine, the state and the missionaries maintained a kind of partnership. Previous studies (perhaps because they have identified to a large extent with the missionary perspective) have emphasized missionary involvement in 'social protest and agitation'<sup>8</sup> and confrontation between the missionaries and the Hindu state, but have paid almost no attention to the changing and multifaceted nature of the missionaries' role as well as of their relationship with the Travancore state.

The relationship between the missionaries and the British authorities also changed very substantially over the period. This change was structural and not merely one caused, as Dick Kooiman has suggested, by a change in the British officials in charge.<sup>9</sup> Similarly, the relationship between the Travancore state and the British authorities underwent a fundamental change, and British policy of non-interference, openly declared by Lord Minto, clearly affected British attitude towards Travancore. Thus, their relationship changed substantially, and some of the principal factors which caused its change were Hindu revivalism, Indian nationalism and the political awakening of a variety of communities, which emerged from the late nineteenth century onwards.

Meanwhile, similar changes to those in Travancore, such as

---

<sup>8</sup> G.A. Oddie, Social Protest in India: British Protestant Missionaries and Social Reforms, 1850-1900 (New Delhi: Manohar, 1979), p.3.

<sup>9</sup> Dick Kooiman, Conversion and Social Equality in India: The London Missionary Society in South Travancore in the 19th Century (New Delhi: Manohar, 1989), p.198.

the emergence of communal movements, more or less affected the society and politics of Cochin State. However, as far as the missionaries were concerned, Cochin was very different from Travancore. At least in terms of the number of converts, their activities in Cochin were anything but a success. As a result of this failure, strained relationship between the state and the missionaries did not strongly exist in Cochin. And at least partly for this reason, the introduction of educational and medical reforms was much delayed compared to Travancore. In Travancore, as we have seen, many reforms regarding education and the uplift of the lower castes had to be adopted in practice partly due to the competition and compromise with the missionaries.

Finally, the anti-Christian or anti-missionary policy continued in Travancore in the 1940s largely by Dewan C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar. But it was Syrian Christians who strongly opposed the government policy, and the missionaries, who could not expect any substantial help from the British authorities, had no choice but to accept the situation. Then, the independence of India finally and totally deprived the missionaries of a privileged position. Today, the Christians of the former LMS and the CMS belong to the Church of South India, which was inaugurated in 1947 and is now managed by Indians.<sup>10</sup> Travancore and Cochin were united into the secular state of Travancore-Cochin in 1949 and then merged into Kerala

---

<sup>10</sup> Bengt Sundkler, Church of South India: The Movement towards Union, 1900-1947 (London: Lutterworth, 1965, first edition 1954), p.399.

State in 1956. Thus, the Maharaja lost his political power as well as his standing as a Hindu prince, though even today the former ruling family plays an important role in some rituals in Kerala. The relationship between the state of Kerala and the Christians, as well as the continuing importance of the former ruling family after the independence, might be a matter for further investigation.

## APPENDIX

Rulers, Dewans and British Residents in Travancore and Cochin,  
c.1850-1940.

## 1. Rulers of Travancore

1729-1758	Martanda Varma
1758-1798	Rama Varma
1798-1810	Bala Rama Varma
1810-1815	Rani Gouri Lakshmi Bai
1815-1829	Rani Gouri Parvathi Bai
1829-1847	Rama Varma (Swathi Tirunal)
1847-1860	Martanda Varma (Uttaram Tirunal)
1860-1880	Rama Varma (Ayilliam Tirunal)
1880-1885	Rama Varma (Visakham Tirunal)
1885-1924	Rama Varma (Sri Mulam Tirunal)
1924-1931	Sethu Lakshmi Bai, The Senior Maharani as Regent
1931-1949	Rama Varma (Sri Chitra Tirunal)

## 2. Dewans of Travancore

1801-1809	Velu Tampi
1809-1811	Oommini Tampi
1811-1814	Col. John Munro (served concurrently as Resident)
1814-1815	Dewan Padmanaban
1815-1816	Shungoo Annavi
1816-1817	Rama Menon
1817-1822	Venkata Row, <u>alias</u> Reddy Row
1812-1830	Venkata Row
1830-1837	Subba Row
1837-1838	R. Ranga Row, Acting
1838-1839	R.R.R. Venkata Row
1839-1842	Subba Row
1842-1843	Venkata Row, <u>alias</u> Reddy Row
1845-1847	Sreenivasa Row, in charge
1847-1857	V. Krishana Row
1857-1872	Sir T. Madava Row (Acting in 1857)
1872-1877	Sir Seshiah Sastri
1877-1880	N. Nanoo Pillay
1880-1887	V. Ramiengar
1887-1892	T. Rama Row
1892-1898	S. Shungarasubbier

1898-1904	K. Krishnaswamy Row
1904-1906	V.P. Madhava Rao
1906-1907	S. Gopalachariyar
1907-1914	Sir P. Rajagopalachari
1914-1920	Sir M. Krishnan Nair
1920-1925	T. Raghaviah, B.A.
1925-1929	Maurice E. Watts
1929-1932	V.S. Sabrahmanya Aiyar
1932-1934	T. Austin, ICS., Barrister-at-law
1934-1936	Khan Bahadur Nawab Sir Muhammad Habibullah Sahib Bahadur, K.C.S.I., K.C.I.E.
1936-1947	Sachivothama Sir C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar, K.C.I.E.

### 3. British Residents in Travancore and Cochin

1800-1810	Colonel C. Macaulay
1810-1819	Colonel J. Munro
1819-1820	Colonel S. McDonail
1821-1827	Colonel D. Newall
1827-1829	Colonel W. Morrison
1829-1834	Lieut-Colonel E. Cadogan
1834-1836	J.A. Casamajor
1836-1838	Colonel J.S. Fraser
1838	Captain A. Douglas (Acting)
1838-1840	Lieut-Colonel T. Maclean
1840-1860	Lieut-General W. Cullen
1860-1862	F.N. Maltby
1862-1864	W. Fisher
1864-1867	H. Newill
1867	A. MacGregor (Acting)
1867-1869	H. Newill
1869-1870	G.A. Ballard
1870-1871	J.I. Minchin (Acting)
1871-1874	G.A. Ballard
1874	Major A.F.F. Bloomfield (Acting)
1874-1875	G.A. Ballard
1875	Major W. Hay (Acting)
1875-1877	A. MacGregor
1877-1878	H.E. Sullivan (Acting)
1878-1879	J.C. Hannyngham (Acting)
1879-1881	A. MacGregor
1881-1883	J.C. Hannyngham
1883-1884	W. Logan (Acting)
1884	R.W. Barlow
1884-1887	J.C. Hannyngham
1887	General Sir H.N.D. Prendergast (Acting)
1887-1890	J.C. Hannyngham
1890	H.B. Grigg
1890-1891	J.C. Hannyngham
1891	H.B. Grigg
1891-1892	J.C. Hannyngham
1892-1895	H.B. Grigg
1895	J.D. Reeds (Acting)
1895-1896	J. Thomson

1896	J.D. Reeds
1896-1897	F.A. Nicholson (Acting)
1897-1898	J.C. Reeds
1898-1899	F.A. Nicholson (Acting)
1899-1904	G.T. Mackenzie
1904-1906	James Andrew
1906-1908	R.C.C. Carr (Acting)
1908-1909	L. Davidson
1909-1910	R.C.C. Carr
1910-1912	A.T. Forbes
1912-1913	R.A. Graham (Acting)
1913-1915	A.T. Forbes
1915-1916	R.A. Graham
1916	A.R. Cunning (Acting)
1916-1917	H.L. Braidwood
1917-1920	H.H. Burkitt
1920-1923	C.W.E. Cotton

#### 4. Agents to the Governor-General, Madras States

1923-1926	C.W.E. Cotton
1926	H.A.B. Vernon (Acting)
1926-1928	C.W.E. Cotton
1928-1929	Lt.Col. C.G. Crosthwaite
1929-1930	A.N. Ley Cater
1930-1932	Lt.Col. H.R.N. Pritehard
1932-1935	Lt.Col. W.A.M. Garstin

#### 5. Rulers of Cochin

1844-1851	Rama Varma
1851-1853	Veera Kerala Varma
1853-1864	Ravi Varma
1864-1888	Rama Varma
1888-1895	Veera Kerala Varma
1895-1914	Rama Varma
1914-1932	Rama Varma
1932-1941	Rama Varma

#### 6. Dewans of Cochin

1840-1856	Sankara Variyar
1856-1860	Venkata Rau
1860-1879	T. Sankunni Menon
1879-1889	Govinda Menon
1889-1892	C. Tiruvenkatachariar
1892-1896	V. Subrahmanya Pillai
1896-1901	P. Rajagopalachari
1901-1902	S. Locke (Acting)

1902-1907	N. Pattabhirama Rau
1907-1914	A.R. Banerji
1914-1919	J.W. Bhore
1919-1922	T. Vijayaraghava Charya
1922-1925	P. Narayana Menon
1925-1930	T.S. Narayana Ayyar
1930-1935	C.G. Herbert
1935-1941	Sir R.K. Shanmukham Chetty

Sources: Travancore Almanac & Directory, 1937, pp.44-47; Crown Representative Records.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

## A. ARCHIVES

Oriental and India Office Collections, London

Crown Representative Records, 1857-1942.

Madras Political Proceedings, 1859-1922.

Political and Secret Proceedings, 1859-1946.

Curzon Papers, Mss Eur. F.111.

Lee-Warner Papers, Mss Eur. F.92.

Grant Duff Papers, Mss Eur. F.234.

National Archives of India, New Delhi

Foreign and Political Proceedings, 1850-1936.

Kerala State Archives, Trivandrum

Confidential Files, 1917-1937.

Council for World Mission (formerly London Missionary Society)  
Archives, SOAS, London

Incoming Letters, India, Travancore, 1868-1936.

Reports, India, Travancore, 1866-1940.

Odds, India, 1846-1936.

Church Missionary Society Archives, Birmingham University

Original Papers, Travancore and Cochin, 1880-1934.

Precis Book, Travancore and Cochin, 1891-1933.

Mission Book, Travancore and Cochin, 1875-1878.



Salvation Army International Heritage Centre, London

Folder for Medical India

Folder for Percy Turner

Neyyur Hospital Library

'Kanyakumari Medical Mission'

## B. OFFICIAL PUBLICATIONS AND PRINTED REPORTS

### MADRAS

Native Newspaper Reports, 1876-1914.

Report of the Committee on the Indigenous Systems of Medicine  
(Madras: Government Press, 1923)

Madras District Gazetteers, Coimbatore (Madras: Government Press, 1966)

### TRAVANCORE

Travancore Government Gazette, 1865-1916.

Report on the Census of Travancore taken by command of His Highness the Maha Rajah on the 18th May 1875 (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1876).

Report of the Census of Travancore for 1891, Vol.I, Report  
(Madras: Addison, 1894).

Census of India, 1911, Vol.XXIII, Travancore, Part I, Report  
(Trivandrum: Government Press, 1912).

Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXVIII, Travancore, Part I, Report  
(Trivandrum: Government Press, 1932).

Census of India, 1941, Vol.XXV, Travancore, Part I, Report  
(Trivandrum: Government Press, 1942).

Proceedings of the Sri Mulam Popular Assembly.

Travancore Administration Reports, 1866-1940.

Report of the Co-operative Enquiry Committee (Trivandrum, 1934).

Travancore Almanac, 1904, 1918.

Travancore Directory, 1938.

Criminal Jurisdiction of Travancore Law Courts over European British Subjects, Liddell's Papers (c.1928-29).

Important Papers relating to Criminal Jurisdiction over European British Subjects (n.d.).

Report of the Travancore Education Reforms Committee (Trivandrum, Government Press, 1933).

Report of the Education Expenditure Committee (Trivandrum, Government Press, 1921).

Addresses to Dewan Bahadur M. Krishnan Nair, Dewan of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1920).

Occasional Speeches Delivered by Dewan Bahadur M. Krishnan Nair Trivandrum, Government Press, 1920).

Addresses to the Dewan of Travancore, March-May 1914 (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914).

#### COCHIN

Cochin Administration Reports, 1863-1941.

Report of the Education Survey Committee, Cochin State (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1934).

Report on the Census of Cochin 1891, Part I, The Reviews (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1893).

Census of India, 1901, Vol.XX, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press).

Census of India, 1911, Vol.XVIII, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1912).

Census of India, 1921, Vol.XIX, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1922).

Census of India, 1931, Vol.XXI, Cochin, Part I, Report (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1933).

#### MISSIONARY SOCIETIES

LMS Annual Report.

Travancore District Committee Annual Report, LMS.

LMS Chronicle.

Travancore and Cochin Diocesan Record.

Madras Church Missionary Record.

Church Missionary Intelligencer.

Church Missionary Review.

Proceedings of the Church Missionary Society.

Extracts from the Annual Letters of the Missionaries (London: Church Mission House, 1899)

Report of a Conference of the Foreign Missionary Societies of Great Britain and Ireland (London: Butler and Tanner, 1901).

#### OTHERS

Kerala District Gazetteer, Ernakulam (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1965)

Census of India, 1931, Vol.I, India, Part I, Report (Delhi: Manager of Publications, 1933).

Parliamentary Papers, Vol.18, 1859, Paper No.110.

Rockefeller Foundation Annual Report, 1913-1935.

#### C. BOOKS AND ARTICLES

Achyuta Menon, C., Cochin State Manual (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1911).

Agur, C.M., Church History of Travancore (1903, reprinted New Delhi: Asian Educational Service, 1990).

Alexander, K.C., 'Neo-Christians of Kerala', in J. Michael Mahar (ed.), The Untouchables in Contemporary India (Tucson: University of Arizona Press, 1972), pp.153-61.

Allen, Charles and Sharada Dwivedi, Lives of the Indian Princes (London: Century Publishing, 1984).

Appadurai, Arjun, Worship and Conflict under Colonial Rule: A South Indian Case (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1981).

Arnold, David, 'Touching the Body: Perspectives on the Indian Plague, 1896-1900', Ranajit Guha (ed.), Subaltern Studies V: Writings on South Asian History and Society (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1987).

- \_\_\_\_\_, Colonizing the Body: State Medicine and Epidemic Disease in Nineteenth-Century India (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1993), pp.55-90.
- Ashton, S.R., British Policy towards the Indian States, 1905-1939 (New Delhi: Selectbook Service Syndicate, 1985).
- Bala, Poonam, Imperialism and Medicine in Bengal: A Socio-Historical Perspective (New Delhi: Sage Publications, 1991).
- Bayly, C.A., Indian Society and the Making of the British Empire (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988)
- Bayly, Susan, Saints and Goddesses and Kings: Muslims and Christians in South Indian Society, 1700-1900 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989).
- Brown, E.R., 'Public Health in Imperialism: Early Rockefeller Programs at Home and Abroad', American Journal of Public Health, 66,9, Sept. 1976, pp.897-903.
- Brown, Leslie, The Indian Christians of St Thomas (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1982, first published 1956).
- Cannadine, David, 'The Context, Performance and Meaning of Ritual: The British Monarchy and the "Invention of Tradition", c.1820-1977', in Eric Hobsbawm and Terence Ranger (eds), The Invention of Tradition (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993, first published 1983), pp.101-64.
- Cherian, P., The Malabar Syrians and the Church Missionary Society, 1816-1840 (Kottayam: CMS Press, 1935).
- Cohn, Bernard S., 'Representing Authority in Victorian India', in Eric Hobsbawm and Terence Ranger (eds.), The Invention of Tradition (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1993, first published 1983), pp.165-209.
- Cox, John, Travancore: Its Present Ruin Shown and the Remedy Sought, in a Correspondence with the Government of Madras in the Years 1855-1857 (Nagercoil: LMS Press, 1857).
- Davis, F.S., Cochin: British and Indian (London: Simpkin, Marshall, Hamilton, Kent & Co., 1923).
- Day, Francis, The Land of the Permauls or Cochin its Past and

- its Present (1863, reprinted New Delhi: Asian Educational Service, 1990).
- Desai, A.R., Social Background of Indian Nationalism (Bombay: Oxford University Press, 1948).
- Desai, Mahadev, The Epic of Travancore (Ahmedabad: Navajivan Karyalaya, 1937).
- Dirks, The Hollow Crown: Ethnohistory of an Indian Kingdom (1987, 2nd edition, Ann Arbor: University of Michigan Press, 1993).
- Eapen, K.V., Church Missionary Society and Education in Kerala (Kottayam: Kollett Publication, 1985).
- Fisher, Donald, 'Rockefeller Philanthropy and the British Empire: The Creation of the London School of Hygiene and Tropical Medicine', History of Education, 7,2 (1978), pp.129-143.
- Fisher, Michael, Indirect Rule in India: Residents and the Residency System, 1764-1857 (New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1991).
- Forbes, Fosita, India of the Princes (London: Book Club, 1939).
- Forrester, Duncan B., 'The Depressed Classes and Conversion to Christianity, 1860-1960', in G.A. Oddie (ed.), Religion in South Asia (New Delhi: Manohar, 1991, first published 1977), pp.65-93.
- \_\_\_\_\_, Caste and Christianity: Attitudes and Politics on Caste of Anglo-Saxon Protestant Missions in India (London: Curzon Press, 1979).
- Fletcher, L.V.L., Brother of All (London: Salvation Army, 1956).
- Franke, Richard W. and Barbara H. Chasin, Kerala: Development through Radical Reform (New Delhi: Promilla, 1992).
- Frykenberg, R.E., 'Caste, Morality and Western Religion under the Raj', Modern Asian Studies, 19, 2 (1985), pp.321-343.
- Fuller, C.J., Servant of the Goddess: The Priests of a South Indian Temple (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1984).

- Gladstone, J.W., Protestant Christianity and People's Movements in Kerala: A Study of Christian Mass Movements in Relation to Neo-Hindu Socio-Religious Movements in Kerala, 1850-1936 (Trivandrum: Seminary Publications, 1984).
- Goodall, Norman, A History of the London Missionary Society, 1895-1945 (London: Oxford University Press, 1954).
- Gopalan, A.K., Kerala: Past and Present (London: Lawrence & Wishart, 1959)
- Hacker, I.H., Memoirs of Thomas Smith Thomson (London: Religious Tract Society, 1887).
- \_\_\_\_\_, A Hundred Years in Travancore (London: H.R. Allenson, 1908).
- Hardgrave, Robert L. Jr., 'The Breast-Cloth Controversy: Caste Consciousness and Social Change in Southern Travancore', Indian Economic and Social History Review, 5,2 (1968), pp.171-87.
- \_\_\_\_\_, The Nadars of Tamilnad: The Political Culture of a Community in Change (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1969).
- Hunt, W.S., The Anglican Church in Travancore and Cochin, 1816-1916 (Kottayam: Church Missionary Society Press, 1918).
- Irschick, Eugene F., Politics and Social Conflict in South India: The Non-Brahman Movement and Tamil Separatism, 1916-1929 (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1969).
- Jacob, John A., A History of the London Missionary Society in South Travancore, 1806-1959 (Nagercoil: Diocesan Press, 1990).
- Jayaprasad, K., RSS and Hindu Nationalism: Inroads in a Leftist Stronghold (New Delhi: Deep and Deep, 1991).
- Jeffrey, Robin, 'The Politics of "Indirect Rule": Types of Relationship among Rulers, Ministers and Residents in a "Native State"', Journal of Commonwealth and Comparative Politics, 8,3, 1975, pp.261-81.
- \_\_\_\_\_, The Decline of Nayar Dominance: Society and Politics

- in Travancore, 1847-1908 (New Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1976).
- \_\_\_\_\_, 'A Sanctified Label - "Congress" in Travancore Politics, 1938-48', in D.A. Low (ed.), Congress and the Raj: Facets of the Indian Struggle, 1917-47 (London: Heinemann, 1977), pp.435-72.
- \_\_\_\_\_, 'Travancore: Status, Class and the Growth of Radical Politics, 1860-1940', Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), pp.136-69.
- \_\_\_\_\_, 'Governments and Culture: How Women Made Kerala Literate', Pacific Affairs, 60, 3 (Fall 1987), pp.447-72.
- \_\_\_\_\_, Politics, Women and Well-Being: How Kerala became 'a Model' (London: Macmillan, 1992).
- Kabir, M., and T.N. Krishnan, 'Social Intermediation and Health Transition: Lessons from Kerala', Paper for Workshop on Health and Development in India held in New Delhi on 2-4 January 1992.
- Kamesvara Aiyar, R.V., Sir A. Seshiah Sastri (Madras: Srinivasa, Varadachari & Co., 1902).
- Karunakara Menon, C., A Critical Essay on Sir Seshia Sastri (Madras: Minerva Press, 1903).
- Kooiman, Dick, Conversion and Social Equality in India: The London Missionary Society in South Travancore in the 19th Century (New Delhi: Manohar, 1989).
- \_\_\_\_\_, 'Mass Movement, Famine and Epidemic: A Study in Interrelationship', Modern Asian Studies, 25, 2 (1991), pp, 281-301.
- Koshy, M.J., Constitutionalism in Travancore and Cochin (Trivandrum: Kerala Historical Society, 1972).
- Krishna Menon, T.K., Progress of Cochin (Ernakulam: Government Press, 1932).
- Krishna Pillai, K., Travancore and its Ruler (Changanacherry: Sudharma Publishing House, 1941).
- Kunju, A.P. Ibrahim, 'The Administration of Travancore in the

- Eighteenth Century', Journal of Kerala Studies, 2, 4 (1975), pp.425-48.
- Kusuman, K.K., 'Travancore's Status in Relation to British Paramountcy - A Case Study' Journal of Kerala Studies, 1, 2-3, Jan. (1974).
- Leonard, John G., 'Politics and Social Change in South India: A Study of the Andhra Movement', in Journal of Commonwealth Political Studies, 5,1 (1967), pp.60-77.
- McLane, John R., 'The Early Congress, Hindu Populism, and the Wider Society', in Richard Sisson and Stanley Wolpert (eds), Congress and Indian Nationalism (Berkeley: University of California Press, 1988), pp.47-61.
- Low, D.A., 'Laissez-Faire and Traditional Rulership in Princely India', in Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), pp.372-87.
- Ludden, David, Peasant History in South India (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1985).
- Manor, James, Political Change in an Indian State: Mysore, 1917-1955 (New Delhi: Manohar, 1977).
- \_\_\_\_\_, 'The Demise of the Princely Order: Reassessment', in Robin Jeffrey (ed.), People, Princes and Paramount Power: Society and Politics in the Indian Princely States (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1978), pp.306-28.
- Mateer, Samuel, The Land of Charity: A Descriptive Account of Travancore and its People (London: John Snow and Co., 1871).
- \_\_\_\_\_, Native Life in Travancore (London: W.H. Allen, 1883).
- Mayer, Adrian C., 'Rulership and Divinity: The Case of the Modern Hindu Prince and Beyond', Modern Asian Studies, 25, 4 (1991), pp.765-90.
- Menon, P.K.K., History of Freedom Movement in Kerala (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1972).
- Menon, V.P., Integration of the Indian States (1956, reprinted London: Sangam Books, 1985).



- Metcalfe, Thomas R., The Aftermath of Revolt: India, 1857-1870 (Princeton: Princeton University Press, 1965).
- The Missionary Conference: South India and Ceylon, 1879, vol.1, Papers, Discussions, and General Review (Madras: Addison, 1880).
- Mr. V.P. Madhava Rao, C.I.E.: A Sketch of His Life and Career (Madras: Natesan and Co., 1917).
- Nagam Aiya, V., Travancore State Manual, 3 vols. (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1906).
- Neill, Stephen, A History of Christianity in India, 1707-1858 (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1985).
- Oddie, G.A., 'Christian Conversion in the Telugu Country, 1860-1900', Indian Economic and Social History Review, 7, 1 (1975), pp.61-79.
- \_\_\_\_\_, Social Protest in India: British Protestant Missionaries and Social Reforms, 1850-1900 (New Delhi: Manohar, 1979).
- \_\_\_\_\_, Hindu and Christian in South-East India (London: Curzon Press, 1991).
- Oommen, M.A., Land Reforms and Socio-economic Change in Kerala (Madras: CLS, 1971).
- Painter, A.F., 'The CMS and the Depressed Classes', Church Missionary Intelligencer (May 1904), pp.337-40.
- Padmanabha Menon, K.P., History of Kerala, 4 vols. (1924-37, reprinted New Delhi: Asian Educational Service, 1983).
- Panikkar, K.M., Asia and Western Dominance: A Survey of the Vasco Da Gama Epoch of Asian History, 1498-1945 (London: George Allen & Unwin, 1959).
- Panikkar, K.N., 'Indigenous Medicine and Cultural Hegemony', Studies in History, 8,2, n.s. (1992), pp.283-308.
- 'The Pulayas of Travancore', Church Missionary Intelligencer (April 1883), pp.215-22.
- Rajagopalachari, P., Note on the Administration of Travancore (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1914).
- Ramanath Aiyar, S., A History of Travancore (Madras: Srinivasa Varadachari and Co., 1938).
- Ramakrishnan Nair, R., Constitutional Experiments in Kerala

- (Trivandrum: Kerala Academy of Political Science, 1964).
- Ramasubban, 'Imperial Health in British India, 1857-1900', in Roy MacLeod and Milton Lewis (eds.), Disease, Medicine, and Empire: Perspectives on Western Medicine and the Experience of European Expansion (London: Routledge, 1988), pp.38-60.
- Ramaswami Aiyar, C.P., Speeches and Messages of His Highness Sir Bala Rama Varma, Maharaja of Travancore (Trivandrum: Anantha Rama Varma Press, 1938).
- Ravindran, T.K., Vaikkam Satyagraha and Gandhi (Trichur: Sri Narayana Institute of Social and Cultural Development, 1975).
- Richter, Julius, A History of Missions in India, translated by Sydney H. Moore (Edinburgh: Oliphant Anderson and Ferrier, 1908).
- Reeds, J.D., 'The Daily Life of an Indian Prince', MacMillan's Magazine, No.9, (July 1906), pp.711-20.
- Ray, Bharati, Hyderabad and British Paramountcy, 1858-1883 (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1988).
- Sahasranama Iyer, P.G., Selections from the Writings and Speeches of Sachivottama Sir C.P. Ramaswami Aiyar (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1945).
- Samuel, V.T., One Caste, One Religion, One God: A Study of Sree Narayana Guru (New Delhi: Sterling Publishers, 1977).
- Saradmoni, K., Emergence of a Slave Caste: Pulayas of Kerala (New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1980).
- Segal, J.B., A History of the Jews of Cochin (London: Vallentine Mitchell, 1993).
- Shungoonny Menon, A History of Travancore (1878, reprinted Trivandrum: Government Press, 1983).
- Smith, Solveig, By Love Compelled (London: Salvationist Publishing, 1981).
- Sreedhara Menon, A., A Survey of Kerala History (Kottayam: National Book Stall, 1967).
- \_\_\_\_\_, Social and Cultural History of Kerala (New Delhi: Sterling Publishers, 1979).

- Tharakan, P.K. Michael, 'Socio-Economic Factors in Educational Development: Case of Nineteenth Century Travancore', Economic and Political Weekly, 19,45, 10 Nov. 1984.
- Varghese, T.C., Agrarian Change and Economic Consequences: Land Tenures in Kerala, 1850-1960 (Bombay: Allied Publishers, 1970).
- Velu Pillai, T.K., The Travancore State Manual, 4 vols. (Trivandrum: Government Press, 1940).
- Ward and Conner, Memoir of the Survey of the Travancore and Cochin States (Trivandrum: Sircar Press, 1863).
- Wood, Conrad, The Moplah Rebellion and its Genesis (New Delhi: People's Publishing House, 1987).

#### D. Unpublished Theses

- Chako, Joseph, 'The History of the Salvation Army in Kerala', B.D. Thesis, United Theological College, Bangalore (1979).
- Chiriyankandath, James Lazer, 'Social Change and the Development of 'Modern' Politics in Travancore: From the Late Nineteenth Century to 1938', Ph.D. Thesis, University of London (1985).

